

---

# Nonlinear Expectations, Nonlinear Evaluations and Risk Measures

Shige Peng<sup>\*</sup>

Institute of Mathematics, Shandong University  
250100, Jinan, China  
*peng@sdu.edu.cn*

## 1 Introduction

### 1.1 Searching the Mechanism of Evaluations of Risky Assets

We are interested in the following problem: let  $(X_t)_{0 \leq t \leq T}$  be an  $\mathbf{R}^d$ -valued process,  $Y$  a random value depending on the trajectory of  $X$ . Assume that, at each fixed time  $t \leq T$ , the information available to an agent (an individual, a firm, or even a market) is the trajectory of  $X$  before  $t$ . Thus at time  $T$ , the random value  $Y(\omega)$  will become known to this agent. The question is: how this agent evaluates  $Y$  at the time  $t$ ? If this  $Y$  is traded in a financial market, it is called a derivative, i.e. a contract whose outcome depends on the evolution of the underlying process  $X$ . The output of this evaluation can be the maximum value the agent can accept to buy it or the minimum value to sell it. It may depend on his economic situation, his knowledge on the history of  $X$ , his risk aversion and utility function. In many situation this individual evaluation may be very different from the actual market price.

Examples of derivatives are futures and option contracts based on the underlying asset  $X$ , such as a commodity, a stock index, the interest rate, an exchange rate; or an individual stock; or a mortgage backed security. Here the term derivative is in general sense, i.e., it may be a positive or a negative number.

---

<sup>\*</sup> The author would like to acknowledge the partial support from the Natural Science Foundation of China, grant No. 10131040. He would like to give his special thanks to the organizers as well as the audience of CIME-EMS school, in the beautiful town of Bressanone, for their warm hospitality and enthusiasm. This memorable Italian trip and lecture experience could never been realized without the persistence and the efforts of the organizers to overcome the author's 'Shengen-Italy-visa-paradox'. He would like to thank Li Juan as well as Xu Mingyu for their careful examinations and suggestions to the manuscript.

The well-known Black & Scholes option pricing theory (1973) has made the most significant contribution, over the last 30 years, in modeling the evaluation of derivatives in financial markets.

One of the important limitations of Black–Scholes–Merton approach is that it is heavily based on the assumption that the statistic behavior of the stochastic process  $X$  is exogenously specified. The fact that the Black–Scholes pricing of  $Y$  is independent of the preference of the involved individuals is also frequently argued. On the other hand, in the situation where  $Y$  is not traded, the main arguments of BS model, i.e. the replication of a claim in an arbitrage-free market, are no longer viable, and the evaluation of  $Y$  is often preference-dependent.

In this lecture the evaluation of  $Y$  will be treated under a new viewpoint. We will introduce an evaluation operator  $\mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y]$  to define the value of  $Y$  evaluated by the agent at time  $t$ . This operator  $\mathcal{E}_{t,T}[\cdot]$  assigns an  $(X_s)_{0 \leq s \leq T}$ -dependent random variable  $Y$  to an  $(X_s)_{0 \leq s \leq t}$ -dependent  $\mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y]$ . Although this value  $\mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y]$  is very complicated and is different from one agent to another, we can still find some axiomatic assumptions to describe the mathematical properties of this operator. The evaluation of  $Y$  is treated as a filtration consistent nonlinear expectation or, more general, a filtration consistent nonlinear evaluation. We will prove that this expectation or evaluation is completely determined by a simple function  $g$ .

## 1.2 Axiomatic Assumptions for Evaluations of Derivatives

### General Situations: $\mathcal{F}_t^X$ -Consistent Nonlinear Evaluations

Let us give a more specific formulation to the above evaluation problem. Let  $X = (X_t)_{t \geq 0}$  be a  $d$ -dimensional process, it may be the prices of stocks in a financial market, the rates of exchanges, the rates of local and global inflations etc. We assume that at each time  $t \geq 0$ , the information of an agent (a firm, a group of people, a financial market) is the history of  $X$  during the time interval  $[0, t]$ . Namely, his actual filtration is

$$\mathcal{F}_t^X = \sigma\{X_s; s \leq t\}.$$

We denote the set of all real valued  $\mathcal{F}_t^X$ -measurable random variables by  $m\mathcal{F}_t^X$ . Under this notation an  $X$ -underlying derivative  $Y$ , with maturity  $t \in [0, \infty)$ , is an  $\mathcal{F}_t^X$ -measurable random variable, i.e.,  $Y \in m\mathcal{F}_t^X$ . We will find the law of evaluation of  $Y$  at each time  $s \in [0, t]$ . We denote this evaluated value by  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]$ . It is reasonable to assume that  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]$  is  $\mathcal{F}_s^X$ -measurable. We thus have the following system of evaluator: for each  $Y \in m\mathcal{F}_t^X$

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y] : m\mathcal{F}_t^X \longrightarrow m\mathcal{F}_s^X.$$

In particular

$$\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y] : m\mathcal{F}_t^X \longrightarrow \mathbf{R}.$$

We will make the following **Axiomatic Assumptions** for  $(\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot])_{0 \leq s \leq t < \infty}$ :

- (A1) **Monotonicity**:  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y] \geq \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y']$ , if  $Y \geq Y'$ .  
 (A2)  $\mathcal{E}_{s,s}[Y] = Y$ , if  $Y \in m\mathcal{F}_s^X$ , particularly  $\mathcal{E}_{0,0}[c] = c$ .  
 (A3) **Time consistency**:  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y]] = \mathcal{E}_{s,T}[Y]$ , if  $s \leq t \leq T$ ,  $Y \in m\mathcal{F}_T^X$ .  
 (A4) **“Zero-one law”**: for each  $s \leq t$ ,  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[1_A Y] = 1_A \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]$ ,  $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}_s^X$ .

*Remark 1.1.* Conditions (A1) and (A2) are obvious. Condition (A3) means that at the time  $t \leq T$ ,  $\mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y]$  can be also treated as a derivative with the maturity  $t$ . At the time  $s \leq t$ , the price  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y]]$  of this derivative is the same as the price of the original derivative  $Y$  with maturity  $T$ , i.e.,  $\mathcal{E}_{s,T}[Y]$ .

*Remark 1.2.* The meaning of condition (A4) is: at time  $s$ , the agent knows whether  $X_{\cdot \wedge s}$  is in  $A$ . If it is in  $A$ , then the value  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[1_A Y]$  is the same as  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]$   $1_A Y = Y$ . Otherwise  $1_A Y$  is zero thus it costs nothing. A more generalization of (A4) is

(A4') For each  $s \leq t$ ,

$$1_A \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[1_A Y] = 1_A \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y], \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_s^X.$$

In this lecture we will not study this case (see Peng 2003 [Peng2003b]).

### $\mathcal{F}_t^X$ -Consistent Nonlinear Expectations

In many situations we assume furthermore, instead of (A2), that

(A2') For each  $0 \leq s \leq t$ ,  $Y \in m\mathcal{F}_s^X$ ,  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y] = Y$ .

*Remark 1.3.* The meaning of condition (A2') is: the market has a zero-interesting rate, i.e.,  $r_t \equiv 0$ . We observe that in many cases, even when  $r_t \neq 0$ , we can still define the following discounted evaluation

$$\mathcal{E}_{t,T}^r[Y] := \mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y \exp(-\int_t^T r_s ds)].$$

This  $\mathcal{E}_{t,T}^r[\cdot]$  satisfies (A2').

Let us fix a sufficiently large  $T < \infty$  and consider  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]$  for  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$  and  $Y \in m\mathcal{F}_t^X$ . By (A2')

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y] = \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y]] = \mathcal{E}_{s,T}[Y].$$

We then only need to treat  $\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_s^X] := \mathcal{E}_{s,T}[Y]$ :

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_s^X] &: m\mathcal{F}_T^X \rightarrow m\mathcal{F}_s^X, \\ \mathcal{E}[Y] &= \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_0^X] : m\mathcal{F}_T^X \rightarrow \mathbf{R}. \end{aligned}$$

By the Axiomatic assumptions, we have, for each  $Y, Z \in m\mathcal{F}_T^X$  and  $t \leq T$ ,

- (A1) **Monotonicity**:  $\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t^X] \geq \mathcal{E}[Z|\mathcal{F}_t^X]$ , if  $Y \geq Z$ ;  
 (A2') **Constant-preserving**:  $\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t^X] = Y$ , if  $Y \in m\mathcal{F}_t^X$ ;  
 (A3) **Time consistency**:  $\mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t^X]|\mathcal{F}_s^X] = \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_s^X]$ , if  $s \leq t \leq T$ ;  
 (A4) **“Zero-one law”**:  $\mathcal{E}[1_A Y|\mathcal{F}_t^X] = 1_A \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t^X]$ ,  $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}_t^X$ .

In particular, the functional  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  is a nonlinear expectation, i.e., it satisfies

- (a1) Monotonicity:  $\mathcal{E}[Y] \geq \mathcal{E}[Z]$ , if  $Y \geq Z$ ;  
 (a2) Constant-preserving:  $\mathcal{E}[c] = c$ .

From (A3) and (A4) we have, each  $0 \leq T < \infty$  and  $Y \in m\mathcal{F}_T^X$ ,

$$\mathcal{E}[1_A \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t^X]] = \mathcal{E}[1_A Y], \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_t^X. \quad (1)$$

We recall that this is just the classical definition of the conditional expectation given  $\mathcal{F}_t^X$ . In the next section we will prove that in nonlinear situations we can also derive all the Axiomatic assumptions (A1), (A2'), (A3) and (A4) by this definition (1) provided  $\mathcal{E}$  is strictly monotone. In this case we call  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  an  **$\mathcal{F}_t^X$ -consistent nonlinear expectation**.

*Remark 1.4.* From the above reasoning it is clear that the Axiomatic assumptions (A1)–(A4) are also applied in many other situations to measuring a risky value  $Y$  in a dynamical situation. In fact, an advantage is that they are also workable in the situation where the risky value  $Y$  is not exchanged in markets. For example, a result of a decision is in general not exchangeable. For example, it is applicable to an individual or a group's evaluation of a derivative  $Y$ . In some situation an agent can not have all information  $\mathcal{F}_t^X$ , but this formulation can be also applied to the situation of partially observation, i.e., with a smaller filtration  $\mathcal{G}_t \subset \mathcal{F}_t$ ,  $t \geq 0$ .

*Remark 1.5.* It is clear that for the formulation of an  $\mathcal{F}_t^X$ -consistent evaluation it is not needed to introduce an a priori probability space. But in this lecture we will be within the framework of Brownian Motion filtration  $(\mathcal{F}_t)_{t \geq 0}$ . For more general situation, see [Peng2002].

### 1.3 Organization of the Lecture

In the next section, we will give the formulations of filtration consistent evaluations and expectations under the filtration  $\mathcal{F}_t$  generated by a Brownian Motion. Then in Section 3, we present BSDE theory and introduce a large sort of filtration consistent nonlinear evaluations and expectations, i.e.,  $g$ -evaluations and  $g$ -expectations. This  $g$ -evaluation is entirely determined by

a simple real function  $g$ . We also present a nonlinear decomposition theorem of Doob–Meyer’s type, for the related  $g$ -supermartingale. This result plays a central role in Section 4, in which we will prove that the notion of  $g$ -expectations is large enough to represent all “regular”  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear expectations. This result permit us to find the simple mechanism, i.e., the function  $g$ , of the above apparently very abstract evaluations. We also provide a simple method to test and then find the function  $g$ . In Section 5, we present some basic method to solve numerically BSDE such as  $g$ -expectations and  $g$ -evaluations.

The nonlinear martingale theorem in self-content in this lecture, including the related uncrossing inequalities.

## 2 Brownian Filtration Consistent Evaluations and Expectations

### 2.1 Main Notations and Definitions

In this lecture, we will study the above evaluation problem within the following standard framework. Let  $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$  be a probability space equipped with a filtration  $(\mathcal{F}_t)_{t \geq 0}$ ,  $(B_t)_{t \geq 0}$  be a standard  $d$ -dimensional Brownian Motion defined on this space. We assume that  $(\mathcal{F}_t)$  is the natural filtration of  $B$ :

$$\mathcal{F}_t = \sigma\{\sigma\{B_s; 0 \leq s \leq t\} \cup \mathcal{N}\}, \quad \mathcal{F}_\infty^0 := \bigcup_{t \geq 0} \mathcal{F}_t.$$

where  $\mathcal{N}$  is the collection of  $P$ -null sets in  $\Omega$ . A vector valued stochastic process  $X_t = X(\omega, t)$ ,  $t \geq 0$ , is said to be  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -adapted (or more specifically  $(\mathcal{F}_t)_{0 \leq t < \infty}$ -adapted), if for each  $t \in [0, \infty)$ ,  $(X_t(\cdot))$  is an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -measurable random variable.  $\mathcal{F}_t$  represents our information before time  $t$ . Thus the meaning that  $X$  is  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -adapted process is that at the current time  $t_0$ , we know all trajectories of  $X_t$  for  $t \leq t_0$ . All processes discussed in this lecture are assumed to be  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -adapted. We need the following notations. Let  $p \geq 1$  and  $\tau \leq T$  be a given  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -stopping time.

- The scalar product and norm of the Euclid space  $\mathbf{R}^n$  are respectively denoted by  $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$  and  $|\cdot|$ .
- $L^p(\mathcal{F}_\tau; \mathbf{R}^m) := \{\text{the space of all real valued } \mathcal{F}_\tau\text{-measurable random variables such that } E[|\xi|^p] < \infty\}$ ;
- $L^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, \tau; \mathbf{R}^m) := \{R^m\text{-valued and } \mathcal{F}_t\text{-adapted and stochastic processes such that } E \int_0^\tau |\phi_t|^p dt < \infty\}$ ;
- $D^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, \tau; \mathbf{R}^m) := \{\text{all RCLL processes in } L^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, \tau; \mathbf{R}^m) \text{ such that } E[\sup_{0 \leq t \leq \tau} |\phi_t|^p] < \infty\}$ ;
- $S^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, \tau; \mathbf{R}^m) := \{\text{all continuous processes in } D^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, \tau; \mathbf{R}^m) \}$ ;
- $S_T := \{\text{the collection of all } \mathcal{F}_t\text{-stopping times bounded by } \tau \leq T\}$ ;

- $\mathcal{S}_T^0 := \{\tau \in \mathcal{S}_T \text{ and } \cup_{i=1}^n \{\tau = t_i\} = \Omega, \text{ with some deterministic } 0 \leq t_1 < \dots < t_N\}$ .

In the case  $m = 1$ , we denote them by  $L^p(\mathcal{F}_\tau)$ ,  $L^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, \tau)$ ,  $D^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, \tau)$  and  $S^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, \tau)$ . We observe that all elements in  $D^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$  are  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -predictable. When  $p = 2$ , the above  $L^p$  are separable Hilbert spaces.

We observe the following fact: for each  $\phi \in L^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$  there exists a progressively measurable process  $\bar{\phi}$  which is stochastically equivalent to  $\phi$ , i.e.,

$$P(\omega : \phi_t(\omega) = \bar{\phi}_t(\omega)) = 1, \forall t \in [0, T].$$

In this lecture, we will not distinguish the two processes.

We now give a rigorous definition of  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent evaluations and expectations:

**Definition 2.1.** *The system of operators*

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot] : L^2(\mathcal{F}_t) \rightarrow L^2(\mathcal{F}_s), \quad 0 \leq s \leq t \leq T \quad (2)$$

is called an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear evaluation defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  if for each  $0 \leq s \leq t < T$  and for each  $Y$  and  $Y' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , we have

- (A1) **Monotonicity:**  $\mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y] \geq \mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y']$ , a.s., if  $Y \geq Y'$ , a.s.;
- (A2)  $\mathcal{E}_{t,t}[Y] = Y$ , if  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , a.s., particularly  $\mathcal{E}_{0,0}[c] = c$ ;
- (A3) **Time consistency:**  $\mathcal{E}_{r,s}[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]] = \mathcal{E}_{r,t}[Y]$ , a.s., if  $r \leq s \leq t \leq T$ ;
- (A4) **“Zero-one law”:** for each  $s \leq t$ ,  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[1_A Y] = 1_A \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]$ , a.s.,  $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}_s$ .

*Remark 2.1.* By (A4) it is easy to check that  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[0] = 0$ , a.s.. A condition weaker than (A4) is

$$(A4') \quad \text{For each } s \leq t, 1_A \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[1_A Y] = 1_A \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y], \text{ a.s., } \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_s.$$

As we discussed in the introduction, if (A2) is strengthened to

$$(A2') \quad \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y] = Y, \text{ a.s., } \forall Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_s)$$

then we have

**Proposition 2.1.** *We assume (A1), (A2'), (A3) and (A4). Then, with the definition*

$$\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] := \mathcal{E}_{t,T}[Y], \text{ a.s., } Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T) \quad (3)$$

*We have*

- (A1) **Monotonicity:**  $\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] \geq \mathcal{E}[Z|\mathcal{F}_t]$ , a.s., if  $Y \geq Z$ , a.s.;
- (A2') **Constant-preserving:**  $\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] = Y$ , a.s., if  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ ;
- (A3) **Time consistency:**  $\mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]|\mathcal{F}_s] = \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_s]$ , a.s., if  $s \leq t \leq T$ ;
- (A4) **“Zero-one law”:** for each  $t$ ,  $\mathcal{E}[1_A Y|\mathcal{F}_t] = 1_A \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]$ , a.s.,  $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}_t$ .

**Definition 2.2.** *The system of operators*

$$\mathcal{E}[\cdot|\mathcal{F}_t] : L^2(\mathcal{F}_T) \rightarrow L^2(\mathcal{F}_t), \quad 0 \leq t < T \quad (4)$$

satisfying the above axiomatic assumptions (A1), (A2'), (A3) and (A4) is called an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear expectation (or simply  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation) defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ .

## 2.2 $\mathcal{F}_t$ -Consistent Nonlinear Expectations

The above  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear expectations can be also introduced in a classical way, beginning from the notion of nonlinear expectations:

**Definition 2.3.** *A nonlinear expectation defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  is a functional:*

$$\mathcal{E}[\cdot] : L^2(\mathcal{F}_T) \mapsto \mathbf{R}$$

satisfying the following properties: (a1) *Strict monotonicity:*

$$\begin{aligned} & \text{if } Y_1 \geq Y_2 \quad \text{a.s.}, \text{ then } \mathcal{E}[Y_1] \geq \mathcal{E}[Y_2]; \\ & \text{if } Y_1 \geq Y_2 \quad \text{a.s.}, \quad \mathcal{E}[Y_1] = \mathcal{E}[Y_2] \iff Y_1 = Y_2 \quad \text{a.s.} \end{aligned}$$

(a2) *preserving of constants:*

$$\mathcal{E}[c] = c, \quad \text{for each constant } c.$$

**Lemma 2.1.** *Let  $t \leq T$  and  $\eta_1, \eta_2 \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ . If for each  $A \in \mathcal{F}_t$ ,*

$$\mathcal{E}[\eta_1 1_A] = \mathcal{E}[\eta_2 1_A],$$

*then we have*

$$\eta_2 = \eta_1, \quad \text{a.s.} \quad (5)$$

*Proof.* We choose  $A = \{\eta_1 \geq \eta_2\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$ . Since  $(\eta_1 - \eta_2)1_A \geq 0$  and  $\mathcal{E}[\eta_1 1_A] = \mathcal{E}[\eta_2 1_A]$ , it follows that  $\eta_1 1_A = \eta_2 1_A$  a.s.. Thus  $\eta_2 \geq \eta_1$  a.s. With the same argument we can prove that  $\eta_1 \geq \eta_2$  a.s. It follows that (5) holds. The proof is complete.  $\square$

**Definition 2.4.** *A nonlinear expectation is called an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  if for each  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  and  $t \in [0, T]$ , there exists a random variable  $\eta \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , such that*

$$\mathcal{E}[Y 1_A] = \mathcal{E}[\eta 1_A], \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_t. \quad (6)$$

From Lemma 2.1, such an  $\eta$  is uniquely defined. We also denote it by  $\eta = \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]$ .  $\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]$  is called the conditional  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation of  $Y$  under  $\mathcal{F}_t$ . It is characterized by

$$\mathcal{E}[Y 1_A] = \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] 1_A], \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_t. \quad (7)$$

We will see that, in fact this definition of  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot|\mathcal{F}_t]$  coincides with Definition 2.2. Indeed, we have the following lemmas. The first one checks (A3) and (A2'):

**Lemma 2.2.** *We have, for each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$  and  $Y \in \mathcal{F}_T$ ,*

$$\mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]|\mathcal{F}_s] = \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_s] \quad a.s. \quad (8)$$

*In particular,*

$$\mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]] = \mathcal{E}[Y]. \quad (9)$$

*If  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , we also have*

$$\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] = Y, \quad a.s..$$

*Proof.* Since  $A \in \mathcal{F}_s \subset \mathcal{F}_t$ , thus

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]|\mathcal{F}_s]1_A] &= \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]1_A] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[Y1_A] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_s]1_A]. \end{aligned}$$

It follows from Lemma 2.1 that (8) holds. (9) follows easily from the fact that  $\mathcal{F}_0$  is the trivial  $\sigma$ -algebra (since  $B_0 = 0$ ). Finally, if  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , then the only  $\eta \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$  satisfying (6) is  $Y$  itself. Thus (A2') holds.  $\square$

The second lemma checks (A4):

**Lemma 2.3.** *We have*

$$\mathcal{E}[Y1_A|\mathcal{F}_t] = \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]1_A, \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_t, \quad a.s. \quad (10)$$

*Proof.* For each  $B \in \mathcal{F}_t$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y1_A|\mathcal{F}_t]1_B] &= \mathcal{E}[Y1_A1_B] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]1_{A \cap B}] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]1_A]1_B. \end{aligned}$$

Thus (10) holds.  $\square$

$\mathcal{E}[\cdot|\mathcal{F}_t]$  has also the monotonicity property:

**Lemma 2.4.** *For any  $X, Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , if  $X \leq Y$  a.s., then we have for each  $t \in [0, T]$ ,*

$$\mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] \quad a.s.$$

*In this case, if for some  $t \in [0, T)$ , one has  $\mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t] = \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]$ , a.s., then  $X = Y$ , a.s..*

*Proof.* Define  $X_t = \mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t]$  and  $Y_t = \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]$ , and let  $A \in \mathcal{F}_t$ . Because of the monotonicity of  $\mathcal{E}$ , we have

$$\mathcal{E}[X_t1_A] = \mathcal{E}[X1_A] \leq \mathcal{E}[Y1_A] = \mathcal{E}[Y_t1_A].$$



Now, take  $A = \{X_t > Y_t\}$ . If  $P(A) > 0$ , the strict monotonicity of  $\mathcal{E}$  implies that

$$\mathcal{E}[X_t 1_A] > \mathcal{E}[Y_t 1_A].$$

Comparing the two above inequalities, we conclude that  $P(A) = 0$ .

Now if for some  $t \in [0, T)$ , one has  $\mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t] = \mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]$ , then  $\mathcal{E}[X] = \mathcal{E}[Y]$ . It follows from the strict monotonicity of  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  that  $X = Y$ , a.s..  $\square$

We then can conclude

**Proposition 2.2.** *Let  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  be defined in Definition 2.3. If for each  $0 \leq t \leq T < \infty$  and  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , there exists a  $\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] \in L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_t, P)$  satisfying relation (7), then  $(\mathcal{E}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t])_{0 \leq t < T}$  is an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear expectation defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ .*

*Proof.* We have already (A1), (A3) and (A4). (A2') can be checked by a similar argument.  $\square$

**Lemma 2.5.** *For any  $Y, Y' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  and for each  $t \in [0, T]$  and  $A \in \mathcal{F}_t$  we have*

$$\mathcal{E}[Y 1_A + Y' 1_{A^c} | \mathcal{F}_t] = \mathcal{E}[Y | \mathcal{F}_t] 1_A + \mathcal{E}[Y' | \mathcal{F}_t] 1_{A^c} \quad (11)$$

*Proof.* We have

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}[Y 1_A + Y' 1_{A^c} | \mathcal{F}_t] &= \mathcal{E}[Y 1_A + Y' 1_{A^c} | \mathcal{F}_t] 1_A + \mathcal{E}[Y 1_A + Y' 1_{A^c} | \mathcal{F}_t] 1_{A^c} \\ &= \mathcal{E}[(Y 1_A + Y' 1_{A^c}) 1_A | \mathcal{F}_t] + \mathcal{E}[(Y 1_A + Y' 1_{A^c}) 1_{A^c} | \mathcal{F}_t] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[Y 1_A | \mathcal{F}_t] + \mathcal{E}[Y' 1_{A^c} | \mathcal{F}_t] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[Y | \mathcal{F}_t] 1_A + \mathcal{E}[Y' | \mathcal{F}_t] 1_{A^c}. \end{aligned}$$

$\square$

*Remark 2.2.* (11) is equivalent to (A4'):  $1_A \mathcal{E}[Y 1_A | \mathcal{F}_t] = 1_A \mathcal{E}[Y | \mathcal{F}_t]$ .

### 2.3 $\mathcal{F}_t$ -Consistent Nonlinear Evaluations

Just as in Subsection 2.2, we can also introduce  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear evaluations in the following way:

**Definition 2.5.** *An evaluation is a family of nonlinear functionals parameterized by  $t \in [0, T]$*

$$\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\cdot] : L^2(\mathcal{F}_t) \mapsto \mathbf{R}$$

*which satisfies the following strict monotonicity properties: for each  $t \geq 0$  and  $Y_1, Y_2 \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , we have*

$$\begin{aligned} &\text{if } Y_1 \geq Y_2 \text{ a.s., then } \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y_1] \geq \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y_2]; \\ &\text{if } Y_1 \geq Y_2 \text{ a.s., then } \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y_1] = \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y_2] \text{ iff } Y_1 = Y_2 \text{ a.s..} \end{aligned}$$

**Lemma 2.6.** *For each  $t \leq T$  and  $\eta_1, \eta_2 \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ . If*

$$\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\eta_1 1_A] \leq \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\eta_2 1_A], \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_t,$$

*then*

$$\eta_1 \leq \eta_2, \quad \text{a.s.}$$

*If*

$$\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\eta_1 1_A] = \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\eta_2 1_A], \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_t,$$

*then*

$$\eta_2 = \eta_1, \quad \text{a.s.} \quad (12)$$

*Proof.* To prove the first assertion, we set  $A = \{\eta_1 \geq \eta_2\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$ . Since  $(\eta_1 - \eta_2)1_A \geq 0$ , thus the monotonicity yields  $\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\eta_1 1_A] \geq \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\eta_2 1_A]$ . With  $\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\eta_1 1_A] \leq \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\eta_2 1_A]$ , it then follows from the strict monotonicity that  $\eta_1 1_A = \eta_2 1_A$  a.s.. i.e.,  $\eta_1 \leq \eta_2$  a.s. The second assertion is a simple consequence of the first one.  $\square$

We can also define  $\mathcal{F}$ -evaluation operators

**Definition 2.6.** *A nonlinear evaluation  $(\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\cdot])_{t \in [0,T]}$  defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  is called  $\mathcal{F}$ -evaluation if for each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$  and  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$  there exists a random variable  $\eta \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_s)$ , such that*

$$\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y 1_A] = \mathcal{E}_{0,s}[\eta 1_A], \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_s.$$

From Lemma 2.6, such  $\eta$  is uniquely defined. We denote it by  $\eta = \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]$ .  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot]$  satisfies

$$\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y 1_A] = \mathcal{E}_{0,s}[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y] 1_A], \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_s. \quad (13)$$

We can prove that  $(\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot])_{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T}$  is the  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear evaluation defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ . We first check (A3):

**Lemma 2.7.** *For each  $0 \leq r \leq s \leq t \leq T$  and  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , we have*

$$\mathcal{E}_{r,s}[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]] = \mathcal{E}_{r,t}[Y] \quad \text{a.s.} \quad (14)$$

*In particular,*

$$\mathcal{E}_{0,s}[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]] = \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y] \quad \text{a.s..} \quad (15)$$

*Proof.* Since  $A \in \mathcal{F}_r \subset \mathcal{F}_s$ . Thus by (13),

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_{0,r}[\mathcal{E}_{r,s}[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]] 1_A] &= \mathcal{E}_{0,s}[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y] 1_A] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y 1_A] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_{0,r}[\mathcal{E}_{r,t}[Y] 1_A]. \end{aligned}$$

It follows from Lemma 2.6 that (14) holds.

Let  $r = 0$ , (15) follows then easily from the fact that  $\mathcal{F}_0$  is the trivial  $\sigma$ -algebra (since  $B_0 = 0$ ).  $\square$

We then check (A4):

**Lemma 2.8.** For each  $0 \leq s \leq t$ ,  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$  and  $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$ , we have

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y1_A] = \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]1_A, \quad a.s.. \quad (16)$$

*Proof.* For each  $0 \leq s \leq t$  and  $B \in \mathcal{F}_s$ , we have, by (13),

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_{0,s}[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y1_A]1_B] &= \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y1_A1_B] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_{0,s}[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]1_{A \cap B}] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_{0,s}[[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]1_A]1_B]. \end{aligned}$$

It follows from Lemma 2.6 that (16) holds.  $\square$

We also have (A2):

**Lemma 2.9.** For each  $0 \leq t < T$ , and  $\eta \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , we have

$$\mathcal{E}_{t,t}[\eta] = \eta, \quad a.s..$$

*Proof.* By (13) we have

$$\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\mathcal{E}_{t,t}[\eta]1_A] = \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\eta1_A], \quad \forall A \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t).$$

$\square$

We then can conclude

**Proposition 2.3.** Let  $(\mathcal{E}_{0,t}[\cdot])_{t \in [0,T]}$  be a nonlinear evaluation defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ . If for each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$  and  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , there exists an  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y] \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_s)$  satisfying relation (13), then  $(\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y])_{0 \leq s \leq t < T}$  satisfies the Axiomatic assumptions (A1)–(A4) listed in Definition 2.1.

*Proof.* The above three lemmas have proved (A2)–(A4). (A1) is a direct consequence of the first assertion of Lemma 2.6.  $\square$

Moreover, we can prove the following strict monotonicity  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot]$ .

**Lemma 2.10.** For each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$  and  $X, Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$  such that  $X \leq Y$  a.s., if  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X] = \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]$ , a.s., then  $X = Y$  a.s..

*Proof.* Since  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X] = \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]$ , thus

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[X] &= \mathcal{E}_{0,s}[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X]] = \mathcal{E}_{0,s}[\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_{0,t}[Y]. \end{aligned}$$

It follows from the strict monotonicity of  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  that  $X = Y$ , a.s..  $\square$

We also have the following properties

**Lemma 2.11.** *For each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$ ,  $X, Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$  and  $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$ , we have*

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X1_A + Y1_{A^c}] = \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X]1_A + \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]1_{A^c}.$$

*Proof.* According to Lemma 2.8,

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X1_A + Y1_{A^c}] &= \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X1_A + Y1_{A^c}]1_A + \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X1_A + Y1_{A^c}]1_{A^c} \\ &= \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[(X1_A + Y1_{A^c})1_A] + \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[(X1_A + Y1_{A^c})1_{A^c}] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X1_A] + \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y1_{A^c}] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X]1_A + \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]1_{A^c}. \end{aligned}$$

□

### 3 Backward Stochastic Differential Equations: g-Evaluations and g-Expectations

#### 3.1 BSDE: Existence, Uniqueness and Basic Estimates

BSDE Theory plays a central role in this lecture. A lot of  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent non-linear expectations and evaluations are derived by BSDEs. We first consider the following form of BSDE:

$$Y_t = \xi + \int_t^T g(s, Y_s, Z_s)ds - \int_t^T Z_s dB_s. \quad (17)$$

The setting of our problem is somewhat unusual: to find a pair of  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -adapted processes  $(Y, Z) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^m \times \mathbf{R}^{m \times d})$  satisfying BSDE (17).

*Remark 3.1.* The solution  $Y$  is an ordinary Itô's process:

$$Y_t = Y_0 - \int_0^t g(s, Y_s, Z_s)ds + \int_0^t Z_s dB_s.$$

To prove the existence and uniqueness of BSDE (17) we first consider a very simple case:  $g$  is a real valued process that is independent of the variable  $(y, z)$ . We have

**Lemma 3.1.** *For a fixed  $\xi \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  and  $g_0(\cdot)$  satisfying*

$$\mathbf{E}(\int_0^T |g_0(t)|dt)^2 < \infty,$$

*there exists a unique pair of processes  $(y, z) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^{1+d})$ , satisfies the following BSDE*

$$y_t = \xi + \int_t^T g_0(s)ds - \int_t^T z_s dB_s. \quad (18)$$

If  $g_0(\cdot) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ , then  $(y, z) \in S^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T) \times L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$ . We have the following basic estimate:

$$\begin{aligned} & |y_t|^2 + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T \left[ \frac{\beta}{2} |y_s|^2 + |z_s|^2 \right] e^{\beta(s-t)} ds \\ & \leq \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} |\xi|^2 e^{\beta(T-t)} + \frac{2}{\beta} \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T |g_0(s)|^2 e^{\beta(s-t)} ds \end{aligned} \quad (19)$$

In particular

$$\begin{aligned} & |y_0|^2 + \mathbf{E} \int_0^T \left[ \frac{\beta}{2} |y_s|^2 + |z_s|^2 \right] e^{\beta s} ds \\ & \leq \mathbf{E} |\xi|^2 e^{\beta T} + \frac{2}{\beta} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |g_0(s)|^2 e^{\beta s} ds, \end{aligned} \quad (20)$$

where  $\beta$  is an arbitrary constant. We also have

$$\mathbf{E} \left[ \sup_{0 \leq t \leq T} |y_t|^2 \right] \leq c \mathbf{E} [|\xi|^2 + \int_0^T |g_0(s)|^2 ds], \quad (21)$$

where the constant  $c$  depends only on  $T$ .

*Proof.* We define

$$M_t = \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \left[ \xi + \int_0^T g_0(s) ds \right].$$

$M$  is a square integrable  $(\mathcal{F}_t)$ -martingale. By representation theorem of Brownian martingale (see Lemma 7.1), there exists a unique adapted process  $(z_t) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$  such that

$$M_t = M_0 + \int_0^t z_s dB_s.$$

Thus

$$M_t = M_T - \int_t^T z_s dB_s.$$

We denote

$$y_t = M_t - \int_0^t g_0(s) ds = M_T - \int_0^t g_0(s) ds - \int_t^T z_s dB_s.$$

Since  $M_T = \xi + \int_0^T g_0(s) ds$ , we have immediately (18).

The uniqueness is a simple consequence of the estimate (20). We only need to prove these two estimates. To prove (19), we first consider the case where  $\xi$  and  $g_0(\cdot)$  are both bounded. Since

$$y_t = \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \left[ \xi + \int_t^T g_0(s) ds \right]$$

thus the process  $y$  is also bounded. We then apply Itô's formula to  $|y_s|^2 e^{\beta s}$  for  $s \in [t, T]$ :

$$\begin{aligned} & |y_t|^2 e^{\beta t} + \int_t^T [\beta |y_s|^2 + |z_s|^2] e^{\beta s} ds \\ &= |\xi|^2 e^{\beta T} + \int_t^T 2y_s g_0(s) e^{\beta s} ds - \int_t^T e^{\beta s} 2y_s z_s dB_s. \end{aligned}$$

We take conditional expectation under  $\mathcal{F}_t$  on both sides of the above relation:

$$\begin{aligned} & |y_t|^2 e^{\beta t} + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T [\beta |y_s|^2 + |z_s|^2] e^{\beta s} ds \\ &= \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} |\xi|^2 e^{\beta T} + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T 2y_s g_0(s) e^{\beta s} ds. \end{aligned}$$

Thus

$$\begin{aligned} & |y_t|^2 + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T [\beta |y_s|^2 + |z_s|^2] e^{\beta(s-t)} ds \\ &= \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} |\xi|^2 e^{\beta(T-t)} + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T 2y_s g_0(s) e^{\beta(s-t)} ds \\ &\leq \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} |\xi|^2 e^{\beta(T-t)} + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T \left[ \frac{\beta}{2} |y_s|^2 + \frac{2}{\beta} |g_0(s)|^2 \right] e^{\beta(s-t)} ds. \end{aligned}$$

From this it follows (19) and (20).

We now consider the case where  $\xi$  and  $g_0(\cdot)$  are possibly unbounded. We set

$$\xi^n := (\xi \wedge n) \vee (-n), \quad g_0^n(s) := (g_0(s) \wedge n) \vee (-n)$$

and

$$y_t^n := \xi^n + \int_t^T g_0^n(s) ds - \int_t^T z_s^n dB_s. \quad (22)$$

We observe that, for each positive integers  $n$  and  $k$ ,  $\xi^n$ ,  $\xi^k$ ,  $g_0^n$  as well as  $g_0^k$  are all bounded. We thus have

$$\begin{aligned} & |y_t^n|^2 e^{\beta t} + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T [\beta |y_s^n|^2 + |z_s^n|^2] e^{\beta s} ds \\ &= \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} |\xi^n|^2 e^{\beta T} + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T 2y_s^n g_0^n(s) e^{\beta s} ds \end{aligned} \quad (23)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} & |y_t^n|^2 + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T \left[ \frac{\beta}{2} |y_s^n|^2 + |z_s^n|^2 \right] e^{\beta(s-t)} ds \\ &\leq \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} |\xi^n|^2 e^{\beta(T-t)} + \frac{2}{\beta} \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T |g_0^n(s)|^2 e^{\beta(s-t)} ds \end{aligned} \quad (24)$$

as well as

$$\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{E} \int_0^T \left[ \frac{\beta}{2} |y_s^n - y_s^k|^2 + |z_s^n - z_s^k|^2 \right] e^{\beta s} ds \\ & \leq \mathbf{E} |\xi^n - \xi^k|^2 e^{\beta T} + \frac{2}{\beta} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |g_0^n(s) - g_0^k(s)|^2 e^{\beta s} ds. \end{aligned}$$

The last inequality implies that both  $\{y^n\}$  and  $\{z^n\}$  are Cauchy sequences in  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ . Thus (19) is proved by letting  $n$  tends to  $\infty$  in (24).

It is clear that the solution  $y$  has continuous paths. (21) is a simple consequence of (20) together with B-D-G inequality applied to (18). Thus  $y \in S^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ .  $\square$

*Remark 3.2.* By passing to the limit in both sides of (22) as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ , we also have the relation

$$\begin{aligned} & |y_t|^2 e^{\beta t} + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T [\beta |y_s|^2 + |z_s|^2] e^{\beta s} ds \\ & = \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} |\xi|^2 e^{\beta T} + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T 2y_s g_0(s) e^{\beta s} ds \end{aligned} \quad (25)$$

and, in particular,

$$\begin{aligned} & |y_0|^2 + \mathbf{E} \int_0^T [\beta |y_s|^2 + |z_s|^2] e^{\beta s} ds \\ & = \mathbf{E} |\xi|^2 e^{\beta T} + \mathbf{E} \int_0^T 2y_s g_0(s) e^{\beta s} ds. \end{aligned} \quad (26)$$

With the above basic estimates we can consider the general case of BSDE (17). We assume that

$$g = g(\omega, t, y, z) : \Omega \times [0, T] \times \mathbf{R}^m \times \mathbf{R}^{m \times d} \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^m$$

satisfies the following conditions: for each  $(y, z) \in \mathbf{R}^m \times \mathbf{R}^{m \times d}$ ,  $g(\cdot, y, z)$  is an  $\mathbf{R}^m$ -valued and  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -adapted process satisfying the Lipschitz condition in  $(y, z)$ , i.e., for each  $y, y' \in \mathbf{R}^m$  and  $z, z' \in \mathbf{R}^{m \times d}$

$$|g(t, y, z) - g(t, y', z')| \leq C(|y - y'| + |z - z'|). \quad (27)$$

We also assume

$$g(\cdot, 0, 0) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T). \quad (28)$$

The following is the basic result of BSDE: the existence and uniqueness theorem.

**Theorem 3.1.** *Assume that  $g$  satisfies (28) and (27). Then for any given terminal condition  $\xi \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T; \mathbf{R}^m)$ , the BSDE (17) has a unique solution, i.e., there exists a unique pair of  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -adapted processes  $(Y, Z) \in S^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^m) \times L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^{m \times d})$  satisfying (17).*

*Proof.* In the basic estimate (19) we fix  $\beta = 8(1 + C^2)$ , where  $C$  is the Lipschitz constant of  $g$  in  $(y, z)$ . To this  $\beta$ , we introduce a norm in the Hilbert space  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^n)$ :

$$\|v(\cdot)\|_{\beta} \equiv \{\mathbf{E} \int_0^T |v_s|^2 e^{\beta s} ds\}^{\frac{1}{2}}.$$

Clearly this is equivalent to the original norm of  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^n)$ . But this norm is more convenient to construct a contraction mapping in order to apply the fixed point theorem. We thus set

$$Y_t = \xi + \int_t^T g(s, y_s, z_s) ds - \int_t^T Z_s dB_s$$

We define a mapping

$$I[(y, z)] := (Y, Z) : L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^m \times \mathbf{R}^{m \times d}) \rightarrow L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^m \times \mathbf{R}^{m \times d}).$$

We need to prove that  $I$  is a contraction mapping under the norm  $\|\cdot\|_{\beta}$ . For any two elements  $(y, z)$  and  $(y', z')$  in  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^m \times \mathbf{R}^{m \times d})$  we set

$$(Y, Z) = I[(y, z)], \quad (Y', Z') = I[(y', z')],$$

and denote their differences by  $(\hat{y}, \hat{z}) = (y - y', z - z')$ ,  $(\hat{Y}, \hat{Z}) = (Y - Y', Z - Z')$ . By the basic estimate (20) we have

$$\mathbf{E} \int_0^T \left( \frac{\beta}{2} |\hat{Y}_s|^2 + |\hat{Z}_s|^2 \right) e^{\beta s} ds \leq \frac{2}{\beta} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |g(s, y_s, z_s) - g(s, y'_s, z'_s)|^2 e^{\beta s} ds.$$

Since  $g$  satisfies Lipschitz condition, we have

$$\mathbf{E} \int_0^T \left[ \frac{\beta}{2} |\hat{Y}_s|^2 + |\hat{Z}_s|^2 \right] e^{\beta s} ds \leq \frac{4C^2}{\beta} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T [|\hat{y}_s|^2 + |\hat{z}_s|^2] e^{\beta s} ds.$$

Since  $\beta = 8(1 + C^2)$ , thus

$$\mathbf{E} \int_0^T [|\hat{Y}_s|^2 + |\hat{Z}_s|^2] e^{\beta s} ds \leq \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T [|\hat{y}_s|^2 + |\hat{z}_s|^2] e^{\beta s} ds,$$

or

$$\|(\hat{Y}, \hat{Z})\|_{\beta} \leq \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \|(\hat{y}, \hat{z})\|_{\beta}.$$

Thus  $I$  is a strict contraction mapping of  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^m \times \mathbf{R}^{m \times d})$ . It follows by the fixed point theorem that BSDE (17) has a unique solution.  $(Y, Z) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^m \times \mathbf{R}^{m \times d})$ . It then follows from (28) and (27) that  $g(\cdot, Y, Z) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ . Thus by Lemma 3.1  $Y \in S^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ .  $\square$

The basic estimates (19) and (20) can also be applied to prove the continuous dependence theorem of BSDE (17) with respect to parameters. Let  $(Y^1, Z^1)$  and  $(Y^2, Z^2)$  be respectively the solution of the following two BSDEs:



$$Y_t^1 = \xi^1 + \int_t^T [g(s, Y_s^1, Z_s^1) + \varphi_s^1] ds - \int_t^T Z_s^1 dB_s. \quad (29)$$

$$Y_t^2 = \xi^2 + \int_t^T [g(s, Y_s^2, Z_s^2) + \varphi_s^2] ds - \int_t^T Z_s^2 dB_s. \quad (30)$$

Here the terminal condition  $\xi^1$  and  $\xi^2$  are given elements in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T; \mathbf{R}^m)$  and  $\varphi^1$  and  $\varphi^2$  are two given processes in  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^m)$ . Let  $g$  be the same as in Theorem 3.1. Analogue to the previous method, using Itô's formula applied to  $|Y_s^1 - Y_s^2|^2 e^{\beta(s-t)}$  in the interval  $[t, T]$ , we can obtain the following estimate.

**Theorem 3.2.** *The difference of the solutions of BSDE (29) and (30) satisfies*

$$\begin{aligned} & |Y_t^1 - Y_t^2|^2 + \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T [|Y_s^1 - Y_s^2|^2 + |Z_s^1 - Z_s^2|^2] e^{\beta(s-t)} ds \\ & \leq \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} |\xi^1 - \xi^2|^2 e^{\beta(T-t)} + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T |\varphi_s^1 - \varphi_s^2|^2 e^{\beta(s-t)} ds, \end{aligned} \quad (31)$$

where  $\beta = 16(1 + C^2)$ . We also have

$$\mathbf{E} \left[ \sup_{0 \leq t \leq T} |Y_t^1 - Y_t^2|^2 \right] \leq c \mathbf{E} [|\xi^1 - \xi^2|^2] + c \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |\varphi_s^1 - \varphi_s^2|^2 ds. \quad (32)$$

In particular, when  $\varphi_s^1 \equiv 0$ , (set  $\xi^2 = 0$ ,  $\varphi_s^2 = -g(s, 0, 0)$ ),

$$\mathbf{E} \left[ \sup_{0 \leq t \leq T} |Y_t^1|^2 \right] \leq c \mathbf{E} [|\xi^1|^2] + c \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |g(s, 0, 0)|^2 ds. \quad (33)$$

where the constant  $c$  depends only on the Lipschitz constant of  $g$  and  $T$ .

*Proof.* We apply estimate (19) to  $(y_t, z_t) = (Y_t^1 - Y_t^2, Z_t^1 - Z_t^2)$ :

$$\begin{aligned} & |y_t|^2 + \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T \left[ \frac{\beta}{2} |y_s|^2 + |z_s|^2 \right] e^{\beta(s-t)} ds \\ & \leq \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} |\xi|^2 e^{\beta(T-t)} + \frac{2}{\beta} \mathbf{E}^{\mathcal{F}_t} \int_t^T |\hat{g}(s)|^2 e^{\beta(s-t)} ds, \end{aligned}$$

where  $\hat{g}(s) := g(s, Y_s^1, Z_s^1) - g(s, Y_s^2, Z_s^2) + \varphi_s^1 - \varphi_s^2$ . This with  $|\hat{g}(s)| \leq C(|y_t| + |z_t|) + |\varphi_s^1 - \varphi_s^2|$ , yields (32). This estimate with (21) yields (33).  $\square$

For a fixed  $t_0 \in [0, T]$ , we denote

$$\mathcal{F}_t^{t_0} = \sigma\{\sigma(B_s - B_{t_0}; t_0 \leq s \leq t) \cup \mathcal{N}\}, \quad t \in [t_0, T].$$

The following is a simple corollary of the uniqueness of BSDE (17).

**Proposition 3.1.** *We still assume that  $g$  satisfies Assumptions (28) and (27). If moreover, for a fixed  $t_0 \in [0, T]$  and for each  $(y, z) \in \mathbf{R}^m \times \mathbf{R}^{m \times d}$ , the process  $g(\cdot, y, z)$  is  $(\mathcal{F}_t^{t_0})$ -adapted on the interval  $[t_0, T]$  and  $\xi \in L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_T^{t_0}, P; \mathbf{R}^m)$ . Then the solution  $(Y, Z)$  of BSDE (17) is also  $(\mathcal{F}_t^{t_0})$ -adapted on  $[t_0, T]$ . In particular,  $Y_{t_0}$  and  $Z_{t_0}$  are deterministic.*

*Proof.* Let  $(Y', Z')$  be the solution of  $(\mathcal{F}_t^{t_0})$ -adapted solution, on the interval  $[t_0, T]$  of the BSDE

$$Y'_t = \xi + \int_t^T g(s, Y'_s, Z'_s) ds - \int_t^T Z'_s dB_s^0,$$

where we denote  $B_t^0 \equiv B_t - B_{t_0}$ . Observe that  $(B_t^0)_{t_0 \leq s \leq T}$  is an  $(\mathcal{F}_t^{t_0})$ -Brownian Motion on  $[t_0, T]$ . On the other hand the same processes  $(Y'_t, Z'_t)_{t_0 \leq t \leq T}$  is also  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -adapted and

$$\int_t^T Z'_s dB_s = \int_t^T Z'_s dB_s^0, \quad t \in [t_0, T].$$

Thus from the uniqueness result of Theorem 3.1, The solution  $(Y, Z)$  of BSDE (17) coincides with  $(Y', Z')$  on  $[t_0, T]$ . Thus  $(Y, Z)$  is  $(\mathcal{F}_t^{t_0})$ -adapted.  $\square$

*Remark 3.3.* A special situation of BSDE (17) is when  $\xi$  is deterministic and  $g(t, y, z)$  is a deterministic function of  $(t, y, z)$ . In this case the solution of BSDE (17) is simply  $(Y, Z) \equiv (Y_0(\cdot), 0)$ , where  $Y_0(\cdot)$  is the solution of the following ordinary differential equation defined on  $[0, T]$ :

$$-\dot{Y}_0(t) = g(t, Y_0(t), 0), \quad Y_0(T) = \xi.$$

### 3.2 1-Dimensional BSDE

We will see that each standard 1-dimensional BSDE on  $[0, T]$  induces an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent evaluation, called  $g$ -evaluation, where  $g = g(t, y, z)$  is the generator of the corresponding BSDE which is a simple real valued function. If (and only if)  $g$  satisfies  $g(t, y, 0) \equiv 0$ , then the corresponding  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent evaluation becomes an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent expectation. We also notice that the present state of art of mathematical finance corresponds mostly to  $m = 1$ . It also covers many linear or nonlinear parabolic and elliptic PDEs. In fact  $m > 1$  corresponds to systems of PDEs.

The function  $g$  is defined as follows

$$g(\omega, t, y, z) : \Omega \times [0, T] \times \mathbf{R} \times \mathbf{R}^d \longmapsto \mathbf{R}.$$

We assume, for each  $y, y' \in \mathbf{R}$ ,  $z, z' \in \mathbf{R}^d$ ,  $t \in [0, T]$ ,  $g$  satisfies

$$\left\{ \begin{array}{ll} \text{(i)} & g(\cdot, y, z) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T), \quad \text{for each } y \in \mathbf{R}, z \in \mathbf{R}^d; \\ \text{(ii)} & |g(t, y_1, z_1) - g(t, y_2, z_2)| \leq \nu |y_1 - y_2| + \mu |z_1 - z_2|; \\ & \text{and one of the following three conditions} \\ \text{(iii)} & g(\cdot, y, z)|_{y=0, z=0} \equiv 0; \\ \text{(iii')} & g(\cdot, y, 0) \equiv 0; \\ \text{(iii'')} & g \text{ is independent of } y \text{ and } g(\cdot, z)|_{z=0} \equiv 0. \end{array} \right. \quad (34)$$

where  $\mu, \nu$  are given non negative constants. It is clear that (iii'')  $\Rightarrow$  (iii')  $\Rightarrow$  (iii).

### Comparison Theorem

We first present an important property: The **Comparison Theorem** of BSDE. We will present this theorem in the case where the solution  $Y$  is possibly a RCLL (right continuous with left limit) process i.e.,  $P$ -almost all of its paths of  $Y(\omega)$  are right continuous with left limit. An RCLL process  $(A_t(\omega))_{t \in [0, T]}$  is called an increasing process if  $P$ -almost all of its paths are non-decreasing with  $A_0(\omega) = 0$ .

We first consider the following problem:

to find a solution  $(Y, Z) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^{1+d})$  of the following BSDE

$$Y_t = \xi + \int_t^T g(s, Y_s, Z_s) ds + (V_T - V_t) - \int_t^T Z_s dB_s, \quad (35)$$

The following is a simple corollary of Theorem 3.1.

**Proposition 3.2.** *We assume (34)-(i), (ii). Then, for each  $\xi \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  and  $V \in D^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ , there exists a unique solution  $(Y, Z) \in D^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T) \times L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$  of the BSDE (35). Moreover  $Y + V \in S^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ .*

*Proof.* The case  $V_t \equiv 0$  corresponds to Theorem 3.1. For the general situation we let  $\bar{Y}_t := Y_t + V_t$ . The existence and uniqueness of BSDE (35) is equivalent to the solution  $(\bar{Y}, Z) \in D^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T) \times L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$  of the following standard BSDE :

$$\bar{Y}_t = \xi + V_T + \int_t^T g(s, \bar{Y}_s - V_s, Z_s) ds - \int_t^T Z_s dB_s.$$

□

For a given random variable

$$\hat{\xi} \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T), \quad \hat{V} \in D^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T) \quad (36)$$

let  $(\hat{Y}, \hat{Z}) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^{1+d})$  be the solution of the following BSDE

$$\hat{Y}_t = \hat{\xi} + \int_t^T g(s, \hat{Y}_s, \hat{Z}_s) ds + (\hat{V}_T - \hat{V}_t) - \int_t^T \hat{Z}_s dB_s. \quad (37)$$

It is easy to prove that the difference  $(Y - \hat{Y}, Z - \hat{Z})$  satisfies exactly the same estimate (31) given in Theorem 3.2. Using B-D-G inequality, we then derive the following estimate.

**Proposition 3.3.** *We assume (34)–(i), (ii). Then the difference of the solutions of BSDE (35) and (37) satisfies*

$$\mathbf{E}[\sup_{0 \leq t \leq T} |Y_t + V_t - (\hat{Y}_t + \hat{V}_t)|^2] + \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |Z_s - \hat{Z}_s|^2 ds \leq cE[\xi + V_T - (\hat{\xi} + \hat{V}_T)]^2. \quad (38)$$

where the constant  $c$  depends only on  $T$  and the Lipschitz constant of  $g$  w.r.t.  $(y, z)$ .

We now present

**Theorem 3.3.** (Comparison Theorem of BSDE) *We make the same assumption as in Proposition 3.2. Let  $(Y', Z')$  be the solution of the following simple BSDE*

$$Y'_t = \xi' + \int_t^T \bar{g}_s ds + V'_T - V'_t - \int_t^T Z'_s dB_s. \quad (39)$$

where  $(\bar{g}_t), (V'_t) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R})$  and  $\xi' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  are given such that

$$\xi \geq \xi', \quad g(Y'_t, Z'_t, t) \geq \bar{g}_t, \quad \text{a.s., a.e.}, \quad (40)$$

and such that  $\hat{V} = V - V'$  is an increasing process. We then have

$$Y_t \geq Y'_t, \quad \text{a.e., a.s.} \quad (41)$$

We also have Strict Comparison Theorem: under the above conditions

$$Y_0 = Y'_0 \iff \xi = \xi', \quad g(s, Y'_s, Z'_s) \equiv \bar{g}_s \quad \text{and} \quad V_s \equiv V'_s. \quad (42)$$

**Sketch of the Proof.** We only consider the case  $d = 1$  (i.e.,  $B$  is a 1-dimensional Brownian Motion) and prove the case  $t = 0$ . The general situation is left to the reader as an exercise. We set  $\hat{g}_s = g(s, Y'_s, Z'_s) - \bar{g}_s$  and

$$\hat{Y} = Y - Y', \quad \hat{Z} = Z - Z', \quad \hat{\xi} = \xi - \xi'.$$

The pair  $(\hat{Y}, \hat{Z})$  can be regarded as the solution of the following linear BSDE:

$$\begin{cases} -d\hat{Y}_s = (a_s \hat{Y}_s + b_s \hat{Z}_s + \hat{g}_s)ds + d\hat{V}_s - \hat{Z}_s dB_s, \\ \hat{Y}_T = \hat{\xi}, \end{cases}$$

where

$$a_s := \begin{cases} \frac{g(s, Y_s, Z_s) - g(s, Y'_s, Z_s)}{Y_s - Y'_s}, & \text{if } Y_s \neq Y'_s, \\ 0, & \text{if } Y_s = Y'_s, \end{cases}$$

$$b_s := \begin{cases} \frac{g(s, Y'_s, Z_s) - g(s, Y'_s, Z'_s)}{Z_s - Z'_s}, & \text{if } Z_s \neq Z'_s, \\ 0, & \text{if } Z_s = Z'_s. \end{cases}$$

Since  $g$  satisfies Lipschitz condition, thus  $|a_s| \leq C$  and  $|b_s| \leq C$ . We set

$$Q_t := \exp \left[ \int_0^t b_s dB_s - \frac{1}{2} \int_0^t |b_s|^2 ds + \int_0^t a_s ds \right].$$

We apply Itô's formula to  $Q_t \hat{Y}_t$  on the interval  $[0, T]$  and then take expectation:

$$\hat{Y}_0 = \mathbf{E}[\hat{Y}_T Q_T + \int_0^T Q_t \hat{g}_t dt + \int_0^T Q_t d\hat{V}_t] \geq 0.$$

From this we have  $Y_0 \geq Y'_0$ . This method also applies to prove  $Y_t \geq Y'_t$  when  $t > 0$ .

By Girsanov Theorem,

$$\mathbf{E}[\hat{Y}_T Q_T + \int_0^T Q_t \hat{g}_t dt + \int_0^T Q_t d\hat{V}_t] = 0$$

if and only the following non negative quantities are zero:  $\hat{Y}_t = 0$ ,  $\hat{g}_t \equiv 0$  and  $\hat{V}_T = 0$ , a.s. a.e.. Thus we have the strict comparison.  $\square$

*Remark 3.4.* In many situations the Comparison Theorem is applied to compare the following type of two BSDEs:

$$Y_t^1 = \xi^1 + \int_t^T [g(s, Y_s^1, Z_s^1) + c_s^1] ds - \int_t^T Z_s^1 dB_s, \quad (43)$$

and

$$Y_t^2 = \xi^2 + \int_t^T [g(s, Y_s^2, Z_s^2) + c_s^2] ds - \int_t^T Z_s^2 dB_s, \quad (44)$$

where  $c^1(\cdot), c^2(\cdot) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ . In this case if we have

$$c_s^1 \geq c_s^2, \text{ a.s., a.e., } \xi^1 \geq \xi^2, \text{ a.s..}$$

Then it is easy to apply Theorem 3.3 to derive  $Y_t^1 \geq Y_t^2$ , a.s., a.e..

*Example 3.1.* We consider a special case of BSDE (43) with  $g(s, 0, 0) \equiv 0$ . In this case if  $c_s^2 \equiv 0$  and  $\xi^2 = 0$ , then the unique solution of BSDE (44) is  $(Y_s^2, Z_s^2) \equiv 0$ . It then follows from Remark 3.4 that if  $\xi^1$  and  $c^1(\cdot)$  are both non negative, then the solution  $Y^1$  of (43) is also non negative. In this case we have also, by strict comparison,

$$Y_0^1 = 0 \iff c_s^1 \equiv 0 \text{ and } \xi^1 = 0.$$

An interpretation in finance is: If an investor want to obtain an opportunity of non negative return, i.e.,  $\xi^1 \geq 0$ , then he must invest at the present time some nonnegative value, i.e.,  $Y_0^1 \geq 0$ . If  $\xi \geq 0$ , a.s. and  $\mathbf{E}[\xi^1] > 0$ , then his investment has to be positive:  $Y_0^1 > 0$ .

*Example 3.2.* We assume that  $g(s, 0, 0) \equiv 0$  and  $\xi \geq 0$  with  $\mathbf{E}[\xi] > 0$ . Consider the following BSDE parameterized by  $\lambda \in (0, \infty)$ :

$$Y_t^\lambda = \lambda\xi + \int_t^T g(s, Y_s^\lambda, Z_s^\lambda)ds - \int_t^T Z_s^\lambda dB_s.$$

We can prove that

$$\lim_{\lambda \uparrow \infty} Y_0^\lambda = +\infty.$$

In fact we compare its solution with the one of the following BSDE

$$\bar{Y}_t^\lambda = \lambda\xi + \int_t^T C(-|\bar{Y}_s^\lambda| - |\bar{Z}_s^\lambda|)ds - \int_t^T \bar{Z}_s^\lambda dB_s,$$

where  $C > 0$  is the Lipschitz constant of  $g$  with respect to  $(y, z)$ . By Comparison Theorem, we have

- (i)  $Y_0^\lambda \geq \bar{Y}_0^\lambda$ , for each  $\lambda > 0$ ;
- (ii)  $\bar{Y}_0^1 > 0$ , when  $\lambda = 1$

We also observe that for each  $\lambda \geq 0$ , we have  $\bar{Y}_t^\lambda \equiv \lambda\bar{Y}_t^1$  and  $\bar{Z}_t^\lambda \equiv \lambda\bar{Z}_t^1$ . From this and (i), (ii) it follows that

$$Y_0^\lambda \geq \bar{Y}_0^\lambda = \lambda\bar{Y}_0^1 \uparrow \infty.$$

**Exercise 3.1.** Prove that  $Y_0^\lambda$  is also bounded by:

$$Y_0^\lambda \leq \lambda\hat{Y}_0,$$

where  $\hat{Y}_0$  is a constant.

### Backward Stochastic Monotone Semigroups and $g$ -Evaluations

We now discuss the backward semigroup property of the solution  $Y$  of a BSDE. We introduce the following definition: Given  $t \leq T$  and  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ . We consider the following BSDE defined on the interval  $[0, t]$

$$y_s = Y + \int_s^t g(r, y_r, z_r)dr - \int_s^t z_r dB_r, \quad s \in [0, t]. \quad (45)$$

**Definition 3.1.** We define, for each  $0 \leq s \leq t < \infty$  and  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ ,

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[Y] := y_s. \quad (46)$$

The system  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[\cdot] : L^2(\mathcal{F}_t) \rightarrow L^2(\mathcal{F}_s)$ ,  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$  is called  $g$ -evaluation.

*Remark 3.5.*  $s$  and  $t$  can be also two uniformly bounded  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -stopping times.

**Theorem 3.4.** *Let the function  $g$  satisfies (i)–(iii) of (34). Then the  $g$ -evaluation  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[\cdot]$  defined in (46) satisfies the Axiomatic assumptions (A1)–(A4) listed in Definition 2.1: it is an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear evaluation operator. Furthermore, we have:*

**(A5)** *For each  $Y_1, Y_2 \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$*

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^{-g_{\mu\nu}}[Y_1 - Y_2] \leq \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[Y_1] - \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[Y_2] \leq \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^{g_{\mu\nu}}[Y_1 - Y_2]. \quad (47)$$

*In particular, If  $g$  is independent of  $y$ , i.e., (iii'') satisfies, then we have*

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^{-g_\mu}[Y_1 - Y_2] \leq \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[Y_1] - \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[Y_2] \leq \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^{g_\mu}[Y_1 - Y_2]. \quad (48)$$

Here  $g_{\mu,\nu}(y, z) := \nu|y| + \mu|z|$ ,  $g_\mu(z) := \mu|z|$ ,  $\nu$  and  $\mu$  are the Lipschitz constants of  $g$  w.r.t.  $y$  and  $z$ , respectively.

*Proof.* (A1) is directly from Comparison Theorem. (A2) is obvious. As for (A4), we multiply the BSDE (45) by  $1_A$ ,  $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$  on the interval  $[s, t]$ . Since  $g(r, 0, 0) \equiv 0$ , we have, for  $u \in [s, t]$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} y_u 1_A &= Y 1_A + \int_u^t 1_A g(r, y_r, z_r) dr - \int_u^t 1_A z_r dB_r \\ &= Y 1_A + \int_u^t g(r, 1_A y_r, 1_A z_r) dr - \int_u^t 1_A z_r dB_r. \end{aligned}$$

This implies that  $(1_A y_r, 1_A z_r)_{r \in [s, t]}$  is the solution of the same backward equation with terminal condition  $Y 1_A$ . Thus

$$1_A \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[Y] = \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[1_A Y].$$

Thus we have (A4). (A3) simply follows from the uniqueness of BSDE, i.e., for each  $s \leq u \leq t$ , we have

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[Y] = \mathcal{E}_{s,u}^g[y_u] = \mathcal{E}_{s,u}^g[\mathcal{E}_{u,t}^g[Y]]. \quad (49)$$

(A5) is the direct consequence of the following proposition. □

**Proposition 3.4.** *We assume that  $g_1$  and  $g_2$  satisfy (i)–(ii) of assumption (34). If  $g_1$  is dominated by  $g_2$  in the following sense*

$$g_1(t, y, z) - g_1(t, y', z') \leq g_2(t, y - y', z - z'), \quad \forall y, y' \in \mathbf{R}, \forall z, z' \in \mathbf{R}^d, \quad (50)$$

*then  $\mathcal{E}^{g_1}[\cdot]$  is also dominated by  $\mathcal{E}^{g_2}[\cdot]$  in the following sense: for each  $t > 0$  and  $Y, Y' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , we have*

$$\mathcal{E}_{u,t}^{g_1}[Y] - \mathcal{E}_{u,t}^{g_1}[Y'] \leq \mathcal{E}_{u,t}^{g_2}[Y - Y']. \quad (51)$$

*If  $g$  is dominated by itself, then  $\mathcal{E}_g[\cdot]$  is also dominated by itself.*

*Proof.* We consider the following three BSDEs

$$\begin{aligned} -dy_r &= g_1(r, y_r, z_r)dr - z_r dB_r, \quad y_t = Y, \\ -dy'_r &= g_1(r, y'_r, z'_r)dr - z'_r dB_r, \quad y'_t = Y' \end{aligned}$$

and

$$-dY_r = g_2(r, Y_r, Z_r)dr - Z_r dB_r, \quad Y_t = Y - Y'.$$

We denote  $(\hat{y}_r, \hat{z}_r) = (y_r - y'_r, z_r - z'_r)$  and  $\hat{g}_r = g_1(r, y_r, z_r) - g_1(r, y'_r, z'_r)$

$$-d\hat{y}_r = \hat{g}_r dr - \hat{z}_r dB_r, \quad \hat{y}_t = Y - Y'.$$

Condition (50) implies  $g_2(r, \hat{y}_r, \hat{z}_r) \geq \hat{g}_r$ . It follows from Comparison Theorem that

$$\hat{y}_u \leq Y_u, \quad \forall u \in [0, t], \text{ a.s.}$$

By the definition of  $\mathcal{E}^g[\cdot]$  it follows that (51) holds.  $\square$

### Example: Black–Scholes Evaluations

Consider a financial market consisting of  $d + 1$  assets: a bond and  $d$  stocks. We denote by  $P_0(t)$  the price of the bond and by  $P_i(t)$  the price of  $i$ -th stock at time  $t$ . We assume that  $P_0(\cdot)$  is the solution of the ordinary differential equation

$$dP_0(t) = r(t)P_0(t)dt, \quad P_0(0) = 1,$$

$\{P_i(\cdot)\}_{i=1}^d$  is the solution of the following SDE

$$\begin{aligned} dP_i(t) &= P_i(t)[b_i(t)dt + \sum_{j=1}^d \sigma_{ij}(t)dB_t^j], \\ P_i(0) &= p_i, \quad i = 1, \dots, d. \end{aligned}$$

Here  $r$  is the interest rate of the bond;  $\{b_i\}_{i=1}^d$  is the rate of the expected return,  $\{\sigma_{ij}\}_{i,j=1}^d$  the volatility of the stocks. We assume that  $r, b, \sigma$  and  $\sigma^{-1}$  are all  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -adapted and uniformly bounded processes on  $[0, \infty)$ . The problem is how a market evaluates an European type of derivative  $\xi \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  with maturity  $T$ ? To solve this problem we consider an investor who has, at a time  $t \leq T$ ,  $n_0(t)$  bonds and  $n_i(t)$   $i$ -stocks,  $i = 1, \dots, d$ , i.e., he invests  $n_0(t)P_0(t)$  in bond and  $\pi_i(t) = n_i(t)P_i(t)$  in the  $i$ -th stock.  $\pi(t) = (\pi_1(t), \dots, \pi_d(t))$ ,  $0 \leq t \leq T$  is an  $\mathbf{R}^d$  valued, square-integrable and adapted process. We define by  $y(t)$  the investor's wealth invested in the market at time  $t$ :

$$y(t) = n_0(t)P_0(t) + \sum_{i=1}^d \pi_i(t).$$

We make the so called self-financing assumption: in the period  $[0, T]$ , the investor does not withdraw his money from, or put some other person's money into his account  $y_t$ . Under this condition, his wealth  $y$  evolves according to



$$dy(t) = n_0(t)dP_0(t) + \sum_{i=1}^d n_i(t)dP_i(t).$$

or

$$dy(t) = [r(t)y(t) + \sum_{i=1}^d (b_i(t) - r(t))\pi_i(t)]dt + \sum_{i,j=1}^d \sigma_{ij}(t)\pi_i(t)dB_t^j.$$

We denote

$$g(t, y, z) = -r(t)y - \sum_{i,j=1}^d (b_i(t) - r(t))\sigma_{ji}^{-1}(t)z_j.$$

Then, by the change of variable  $z_j(t) = \sum_{i=1}^d \sigma_{ij}(t)\pi_i(t)$ , the above equation becomes

$$-dy(t) = g(t, y(t), z(t))dt - z(t)dB_t.$$

We observe that the function  $g$  satisfies (i) and (ii) of (34). It follows from the existence and uniqueness theorem of BSDE (Theorem 3.1) that for each derivative  $\xi \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , there exists a unique solution  $(y(\cdot), z(\cdot)) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^{1+d})$  with the terminal condition  $y_T = \xi$ . This meaning is significant: in order to replicate the derivative  $\xi$ , the investor needs and only needs to invest  $y(t)$  at the present time  $t$  and then, during the time interval  $[t, T]$ , to perform the strategy  $\pi_i(s) = \sigma_{ij}^{-1}(s)z_j(s)$ . Furthermore, by Comparison Theorem of BSDE, if he wants to replicate a  $\xi'$  which is bigger than  $\xi$ , (i.e.,  $\xi' \geq \xi$ , a.s.,  $P(\xi' \geq \xi) > 0$ ), then he must pay more. This means that no arbitrage-free strategy exists. This  $y(t)$  is called the Black-Scholes price, or Black-Scholes evaluation, of  $\xi$  at the time  $t$ . We define, as in (46)  $\mathcal{E}_{t,T}^g[\xi] = y_t$ . We observe that the function  $g$  satisfies (i)–(iii) of condition (34). It follows from Theorem 3.4 that  $\mathcal{E}_{t,T}^g[\cdot]$  satisfies (A1)–(A4) of  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent evaluation.

### $g$ -Expectations

In this subsection we will consider a particularly interesting situation of the above stochastic semigroups: when  $g$  satisfies  $g(s, y, z)|_{z=0} \equiv 0$ , i.e., it satisfy (i), (ii) and (iii') in (34). In this situation  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[Y]$  satisfies (A2'):

**Proposition 3.5.** *For each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$ , and  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_s)$ , we have*

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[Y] = Y. \quad (52)$$

*Proof.* We consider the solution  $(y, z)$  of (45) with the same terminal condition  $Y$ , but defined on  $[s, t]$ :

$$y_u = Y + \int_u^t g(r, y_r, z_r)dr - \int_u^t z_r dB_r, \quad u \in [s, t]. \quad (53)$$

We have  $y_u = \mathcal{E}_{u,t}^g[Y]$ . But by Assumption (34)–(iii'), it is easy to check  $(y_u, z_u) \equiv (Y, 0)$ . We thus have (52).  $\square$

Thus we can define  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear expectation  $\mathcal{E}_g[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]$ :

**Definition 3.2.** We define

$$\mathcal{E}_g[Y] := \mathcal{E}_{0,T}^g[Y], \quad \mathcal{E}_g[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] := \mathcal{E}_{t,T}^g[Y], \quad Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T). \quad (54)$$

$\mathcal{E}_g[Y]$  is called  $g$ -expectation of  $Y$ . In particular, if  $g = \mu|z|$  then we denote  $\mathcal{E}_g[Y] = \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y]$ .

$g$ -expectations is nonlinear but it satisfies all other properties of a classical linear expectation.

**Proposition 3.6.** We assume that  $g$  satisfies (i), (ii) and (iii') in (34). Then the  $g$ -expectation  $\mathcal{E}_g[\cdot]$  defined in (54) is an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear expectation defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ . That is, it satisfies (A1), (A2'), (A3) and (A4) listed in Definition 2.2. Moreover,  $\mathcal{E}_g[\cdot]$  is dominated by  $\mathcal{E}^\mu[\cdot]$  and  $\mathcal{E}^{g_{\mu,\nu}}[\cdot]$  in the following sense:

$$-\mathcal{E}^\mu[-Y|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}_g[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_t], \quad \forall Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T). \quad (55)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_{t,T}^{-g_{\mu,\nu}}[Y_1 - Y_2] &\leq \mathcal{E}_g[Y_1|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}_g[Y_2|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}_{t,T}^{g_{\mu,\nu}}[Y_1 - Y_2], \\ \forall Y_1, Y_2 &\in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T). \end{aligned} \quad (56)$$

*Proof.* Since  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[\cdot]$  satisfies (A1), (A2'), (A3) and (A4), by Proposition 2.1,  $\mathcal{E}_g[\cdot|\mathcal{F}_t]$  defined in (54) satisfies (A1), (A2'), (A3) and (A4) of  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -expectations.

(56) is directly by (47). (55) is proved from the comparison theorem of BSDE since  $\mathcal{E}^\mu[\cdot] = \mathcal{E}_{g_\mu}[\cdot]$ , with  $g_\mu(z) = \mu|z| \geq g(t, y, z)$ .  $\square$

**Definition 3.3.** Let  $\tau \leq T$  be a stopping time. We also define

$$\mathcal{E}_g[Y|\mathcal{F}_\tau] = \mathcal{E}_{\tau,T}^g[Y].$$

**Definition 3.4.** ( $g$ -martingales) A process  $(Y_t)_{0 \leq t \leq T}$  with  $E[Y_t^2] < \infty$  for all  $t$  is called a  $g$ -martingale (resp.  $g$ -supermartingale,  $g$ -submartingale) if, for each  $s \leq t \leq T$ , we have

$$\mathcal{E}_g[Y_t|\mathcal{F}_s] = Y_s, \quad (\text{resp. } \leq Y_s, \geq Y_s).$$

The importance of this special setting follows from the following economically meaningful property.

**Lemma 3.2.** Let the function  $g$  satisfies (i), (ii) and (iii'') of (34). Then

$$\mathcal{E}_g[Y + \eta|\mathcal{F}_t] = \mathcal{E}_g[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] + \eta, \quad \forall \eta \in L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_t, P). \quad (57)$$

*Proof.* Consider the BSDE

$$\begin{aligned} -dy_s &= g(s, z_s)ds - z_s dB_s, \quad t \leq s \leq T, \\ y_T &= Y. \end{aligned}$$

We have by the definition  $\mathcal{E}_g[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] = y_t$ . On the other hand, it is easy to check that  $(y'_s, z'_s) := (y_s + \eta, z_s)$ ,  $s \in [t, T]$  solve the above equation with the terminal condition  $y'_T = Y + \eta$ . It then follows that

$$\mathcal{E}_g[Y + \eta|\mathcal{F}_t] = y'_t = y_t + \eta = \mathcal{E}_g[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] + \eta.$$

□

*Remark 3.6.* Economically, (57) means that the nonlinearity of  $\mathcal{E}_g[Y + \eta]$  is only due to the risky part of  $Y + \eta$ .

We will always write in the sequel  $\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y] := \mathcal{E}_g[Y]$  for  $g = \mu|z|$  and  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[Y] := \mathcal{E}_g[Y]$  for  $g \equiv -\mu|z|$ . Note that

$$\forall c > 0, \quad \mathcal{E}^\mu[cY|\mathcal{F}_t] = c\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] \quad (58)$$

and

$$\forall c < 0, \quad \mathcal{E}^\mu[cY|\mathcal{F}_t] = -c\mathcal{E}^\mu[-Y|\mathcal{F}_t].$$

An important feature of  $\mathcal{E}^\mu[\cdot]$  is

**Proposition 3.7.** *Let  $g$  satisfy (i), (ii) and (iii') of Assumption (34), then  $\mathcal{E}_g[\cdot]$  is dominated by  $\mathcal{E}^\mu[\cdot]$  in the following sense, for each  $t \geq 0$ ,*

$$\mathcal{E}_g[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}_g[Y'|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}_{t,T}^{g\mu,v}[Y - Y'], \quad \forall Y, Y' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T). \quad (59)$$

*If  $g$  is independent of  $y$ , i.e., (iii'') satisfies, then we have*

$$\mathcal{E}_g[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}_g[Y'|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y - Y'|\mathcal{F}_t], \quad \forall Y, Y' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T). \quad (60)$$

*In particular,  $\mathcal{E}^\mu[\cdot]$  is dominated by itself:*

$$\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y'|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y - Y'|\mathcal{F}_t], \quad \forall Y, Y' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T). \quad (61)$$

*Proof.* We observe that  $\mathcal{E}_{t,T}^{g\mu,0}[Y] = \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]$ . Thus (59) as well as (61) are directly derived by (A5) of Theorem 3.4. □

The self-domination property (61) of  $\mathcal{E}^\mu[\cdot]$  permit us to defined a norm

**Definition 3.5.** *We define*

$$\|Y\|_\mu := \mathcal{E}^\mu[|Y|], \quad Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T).$$

**Proposition 3.8.**  $\|\cdot\|_\mu$  forms a norm in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ .

*Proof.* The triangle inequality  $\|Y\|_\mu + \|Z\|_\mu \leq \|Y + Z\|_\mu$  follows from (61) with  $t = 0$ . By (58) we also have  $\|cY\|_\mu = c\|Y\|_\mu$ ,  $c \geq 0$ . □

**Proposition 3.9.** *Under  $\|\cdot\|_\mu$ ,  $\mathcal{E}_g[\cdot|\mathcal{F}_t]$  is a contraction mapping:*

$$\|\mathcal{E}_g[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}_g[Y'|\mathcal{F}_t]\|_\mu \leq \|Y - Y'\|_\mu.$$

*Proof.* It is an easy consequence of (59).  $\square$

**Proposition 3.10.** *For each  $\mu > 0$ , and  $T > 0$ , there exist a constant  $c_{\mu,T}$  such that*

$$\mathbf{E}[|Y|] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[|Y|] \leq c_{\mu,T}(\mathbf{E}[|Y|^2])^{1/2}. \quad (62)$$

*Proof.* By definition,

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}^\mu[|Y||\mathcal{F}_t] &= |Y| + \int_t^T \mu |Z_s| ds - \int_t^T Z_s dB_s \\ &= |Y| + \int_t^T b_\mu(s) Z_s ds - \int_t^T Z_s dB_s, \end{aligned} \quad (63)$$

where  $b_\mu(s) = \mu \frac{Z_s}{|Z_s|} 1_{\{|Z_s|>0\}}$ . Let  $Q_t^\mu$  be the solution of SDE

$$dQ_t^\mu = b_\mu(t) Q_t^\mu dB_t, \quad Q_0^\mu = 1.$$

Using Itô's formula to  $Q_t^\mu \mathcal{E}^\mu[|Y||\mathcal{F}_t]$ , we have

$$\mathcal{E}^\mu[|Y|] = \mathcal{E}^\mu[|Y||\mathcal{F}_0] = E[Q_T^\mu |Y|] \leq \{E[(Q_T^\mu)^2]\}^{1/2} \cdot \{E[|Y|^2]\}^{1/2}.$$

But since  $|b_\mu| \leq \mu$ , there exists a constant  $c_{\mu,T}$  depending only on  $\mu$  and  $T$ , such that  $E[(Q_T^\mu)^2]^{1/2} \leq c_{\mu,T}$ . We thus have the second inequality of (62). The first inequality is derived by taking  $t = 0$  on both sides of (63) and then taking expectation.  $\square$

We then have

**Corollary 3.1.** *Let  $T$  be fixed. Then the extension  $L_\mu(\mathcal{F}_T)$  of  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  under the norm  $\|\cdot\|_\mu$  is a Banach space.*

**Lemma 3.3.** *We have for all  $\mu > 0$  and  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ ,*

$$\mathbf{E}[\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]^2] \leq e^{\mu^2(T-t)} E[Y^2].$$

*Proof.* By definition,

$$\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] = Y + \int_t^T \mu |Z_s| ds - \int_t^T Z_s dB_s.$$

Itô's formula gives

$$\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]^2 = Y^2 + \int_t^T 2\mu \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_s] |Z_s| ds - 2 \int_t^T \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_s] Z_s dB_s - \int_t^T Z_s^2 ds.$$

Taking expectations, we deduce that

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{E}[\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]^2] &= \mathbf{E}[Y^2] + \int_t^T \mathbf{E}[2\mu \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_s] |Z_s|] ds - \int_t^T \mathbf{E}[Z_s^2] ds \\ &\leq \mathbf{E}[Y^2] + \mu^2 \int_t^T \mathbf{E}[\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_s]^2] ds \end{aligned}$$

(because of  $2ab \leq a^2 + b^2$ ). The claim follows then immediately from Gronwall's inequality.  $\square$

### Upcrossing Inequality of $\mathcal{E}^g$ -Supermartingales and Optional Sampling Inequality

We begin with an easy upcrossing inequality which reveals the main idea to prove such kind of inequalities in nonlinear situation.

**Proposition 3.11.** *Let  $g$  satisfy (i), (ii), (iii') of (34) and let  $(Y_t)$  be a  $g$ -supermartingale on  $[0, T]$ . Let  $0 = t_0 < t_1 < \dots < t_n = T$ , and  $a < b$  be two constants. Then there exists a constant  $c > 0$  such that the number  $U_a^b[Y, n]$  of upcrossings of  $[a, b]$  by  $\{Y_{t_j}\}_{0 \leq j \leq n}$  satisfies*

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[U_a^b[Y, n]] \leq \frac{\mathcal{E}^\mu[(Y_T - a)^-]}{b - a}. \quad (64)$$

**Sketch of Proof.** We only prove the case  $d = 1$ . For  $j = 1, 2, \dots, n$ , we consider the following BSDE

$$y_t^j = Y_{t_j} + \int_t^{t_j} g(s, y_s^j, z_s^j) ds - \int_t^{t_j} z_s^j dB_s, \quad t \in [t_{j-1}, t_j].$$

Then we define, for  $s \in [t_{j-1}, t_j]$ ,

$$a_s^j := \begin{cases} (z_s^j)^{-1} g(s, y_s^j, z_s^j), & \text{if } z_s^j \neq 0; \\ 0, & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

and then  $a_s := \sum_{j=1}^n a_s^j 1_{(t_{j-1}, t_j]}(s)$ . Since  $g$  is Lipschitz in  $z$  and  $g(t, y, 0) \equiv 0$ , it is clear that  $|a_s| \leq \mu$ . We also have, for each  $j$ ,

$$g(s, y_s^j, z_s^j) = a_s z_s^j, \quad s \in (t_{j-1}, t_j].$$

We set

$$\frac{dQ}{dP} \Big|_{\mathcal{F}_T} := \exp \left\{ \int_0^T a_s dB_s - \frac{1}{2} \int_0^T |a_s|^2 ds \right\}.$$

By Girsanov Theorem,  $Q$  is a probability measure and

$$\mathbf{E}_Q[Y_{t_j} | \mathcal{F}_{t_{j-1}}] = \mathcal{E}^g[Y_{t_j} | \mathcal{F}_{t_{j-1}}] \leq Y_{t_{j-1}}, \quad j = 1, 2, \dots, n,$$

for  $Y$  is a  $g$ -supermartingale. This implies that  $\{Y_{t_j}\}_{j=1}^n$  is a (discrete)  $Q$ -supermartingale. We then can apply the classical up crossing theorem ((see e.g., [HWY1992], Theorem 2.14 and 2.42))

$$\mathbf{E}_Q[U_a^b[Y, n]] \leq \frac{\mathbf{E}_Q[(Y_T - a)^-]}{b - a}.$$

This with  $|a_s| \leq \mu$ , we then can apply the comparison theorem to prove (64).

□

We now consider a more general situation. Let  $(Y_t)_{t \in [0, T]}$  be an adapted process. For a given time sequence  $t_0, t_1, t_2, \dots$  in  $[0, T]$  with  $0 \leq t_0 < t_1 < t_2 < \dots$ , we denote  $\tau_{-1} := t_0$  and

$$\begin{aligned}\tau_0 &:= \inf\{t_i \geq t_0; Y_{t_i} \leq a\} \\ \tau_1 &:= \inf\{t_i \geq \tau_1; Y_{t_i} \geq b\} \\ &\dots\dots\dots \\ \tau_{2i} &:= \inf\{t_i \geq \tau_{2i-1}; Y_{t_i} \leq a\} \\ \tau_{2i+1} &:= \inf\{t_i \geq \tau_{2i+1}; Y_{t_i} \geq b\} \\ &\dots\dots\dots\end{aligned}$$

If  $\tau_{2j-1} \leq T$ , sequence  $(Y_{\tau_0}, \dots, Y_{\tau_{2i-1}})$  upcrosses the interval  $[a, b]$   $i$  times. We denote by  $U_a^b(Y, k)$  the number of upcrossing  $[a, b]$  of the sequence  $(Y_{t_0}, \dots, Y_{t_k})$ . It is clear that

$$\{U_a^b(Y, k) = i\} = \{\tau_{2i-1} \leq t_k < \tau_{2i+1}\}$$

We now fix an integer  $n$ . We have the following upcrossing inequality

**Theorem 3.5.** *Let  $g$  satisfy (i) and (ii) of (34) and let  $(Y_t)_{t \in [0, T]}$  be a  $g$ -supermartingale. Then we have*

$$[U_a^b(Y, n)] \leq \frac{1}{b-a} e^{2\mu(t_n - t_0)} \{ \mathcal{E}^\mu[(Y_{t_n} - a)^- + \mathcal{E}^\mu[\int_{t_0}^{t_n} e^{\mu s} |g_s^0| ds] + a\mu(t_n - t_0) \} \quad (65)$$

where  $g_s^0 := g(s, 0, 0)$ .

*Proof.* We set  $\tau_i^n := \tau_i \wedge t_n$ , for each  $i = 0, 1, \dots$ , and consider the following BSDE:

$$\begin{aligned}-dy_t^i &= g(t, y_t^i, z_t^i)dt - z_t^i dB_t, \quad t \in [0, \tau_{2i+1}^n], \\ y_{\tau_{2i+1}^n}^i &= Y_{\tau_{2i+1}^n}.\end{aligned}$$

As in the proof of Comparison Theorem, we can write

$$g(t, y_t^i, z_t^i) = \alpha_t^i y_t^i + \beta_t^i \cdot z_t^i + g(t, 0, 0), \quad t \in [0, \tau_{2i+1}^n],$$

with  $|\alpha_s^i| \leq \mu$ ,  $|\beta_s^i| \leq \mu$ . For  $t \in [0, T]$ , we define

$$\begin{aligned}\alpha_t &:= \sum_{i=0}^n 1_{(\tau_{2i}^n, \tau_{2i+1}^n)}(t) \alpha_t^i, \\ \beta_t &:= \sum_{i=0}^n 1_{(\tau_{2i}^n, \tau_{2i+1}^n)}(t) \beta_t^i.\end{aligned}$$

We then introduce a new probability  $Q$  by

$$\frac{dQ}{dP}|\mathcal{F}_T := \exp\left[-\frac{1}{2}\int_0^T |\beta_s|^2 ds + \int_0^T \beta_s dB_s\right].$$

Since  $Y$  is an  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supermartingale, we have, for each  $i = 0, 1, \dots$ , by Lemma 7.8,

$$\begin{aligned} Y_{\tau_{2i}^n} &\geq \mathcal{E}_{\tau_{2i}^n, \tau_{2i+1}^n}^g[Y_{\tau_{2i+1}^n}] \\ &= E_Q[Y_{\tau_{2i+1}^n} \exp(\int_{\tau_{2i}^n}^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} \alpha_s ds) + \int_{\tau_{2i}^n}^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} \exp(\int_{\tau_{2i}^n}^s \alpha_r dr) g_s^0 ds | \mathcal{F}_{\tau_{2i}^n}] \quad (66) \end{aligned}$$

We now estimate the term  $u_i := E_Q[\exp(\int_0^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} \alpha_s ds) 1_{\{\tau_{2i+1} \leq t_n\}}]$ . Since  $(Y_{\tau_{2i+1}^n} - a) \geq b - a$  on  $\{\tau_{2i+1} \leq t_n\}$  and  $\{\tau_{2i} < t_n\} = \{\tau_{2i+1} \leq t_n\} + \{\tau_{2i} < t_n < \tau_{2i+1}\}$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} u_i &\leq \frac{1}{b-a} E_Q[(Y_{\tau_{2i+1}^n} - a) \exp(\int_0^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} \alpha_s ds) I_{\{\tau_{2i+1} \leq t_n\}}] \\ &\leq \frac{1}{b-a} E_Q[(Y_{\tau_{2i+1}^n} - a) \exp(\int_0^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} \alpha_s ds) I_{\{\tau_{2i} < t_n\}}] \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{b-a} E_Q[(Y_{t_n} - a)^- \exp(\int_0^{t_n} \alpha_s ds) I_{\{\tau_{2i} < t_n < \tau_{2i+1}\}}] \end{aligned}$$

With  $\{\tau_{2i} < t_n\} \in \mathcal{F}_{\tau_{2i}}$ , we apply (66) to the first term of the right side:

$$\begin{aligned} u_i &\leq \frac{1}{b-a} E_Q[\{(Y_{\tau_{2i}^n} - a) I_{\{\tau_{2i} < t_n\}} + \int_{\tau_{2i}^n}^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} e^{\mu s} |g_s^0| ds\} \exp(\int_0^{\tau_{2i}^n} \alpha_s ds)] \\ &\quad + \frac{a}{b-a} E_Q[|\exp(\int_0^{\tau_{2i}^n} \alpha_s ds) - \exp(\int_0^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} \alpha_s ds)|] \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{b-a} e^{\mu t_n} E_Q[(Y_{t_n} - a)^- I_{\{\tau_{2i} < t_n < \tau_{2i+1}\}}] \end{aligned}$$

Since  $I_{\{\tau_{2i} < t_n\}}(Y_{\tau_{2i}^n} - a) = I_{\{\tau_{2i} < t_n\}}(Y_{\tau_{2i}} - a) \leq 0$ , and

$$\begin{aligned} &|\exp(\int_0^{\tau_{2i}^n} \alpha_s ds) - \exp(\int_0^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} \alpha_s ds)| \\ &= |\int_{\tau_{2i}^n}^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} \alpha_s \exp(\int_{\tau_{2i}^n}^s \alpha_r dr) ds| \leq \mu e^{\mu(t_n - t_0)} (\tau_{2i+1}^n - \tau_{2i-1}^n), \end{aligned}$$

we thus have

$$\begin{aligned} u_i &\leq \frac{1}{b-a} e^{\mu(t_n - t_0)} E_Q[a\mu(\tau_{2i+1}^n - \tau_{2i-1}^n) \\ &\quad + \int_{\tau_{2i-1}^n}^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} e^{\mu s} |g_s^0| ds + (Y_{t_n} - a)^- I_{\{\tau_{2i} < t_n < \tau_{2i+1}\}}] \end{aligned}$$

We observe that  $I_{\{\tau_{2i} < t_n < \tau_{2i+1}\}} \leq I_{\{U_a^b(Y, n) = i\}}$  and, in the expression of  $u_i$ ,  $\{\tau_{2i+1} \leq t_n\} = \{U_a^b(Y, n) > i\}$ . Thus

$$\begin{aligned} e^{-\mu(t_n - t_0)} E_Q[I_{\{U_a^b(Y, n) > i\}}] &\leq \frac{1}{b-a} e^{\mu(t_n - t_0)} \{E_Q[(Y_{t_n} - a)^- I_{\{U_a^b(Y, n) = i\}}] \\ &\quad + E_Q[\int_{\tau_{2i-1}^n}^{\tau_{2i+1}^n} e^{\mu s} |g_s^0| ds] + a\mu E_Q[\tau_{2i+1}^n - \tau_{2i-1}^n]\}. \end{aligned}$$

Summing both sides for all  $i$  yields

$$\begin{aligned} e^{-\mu(t_n - t_0)} E_Q[U_a^b(Y, n)] &\leq \frac{1}{b-a} e^{\mu(t_n - t_0)} \{E_Q[(Y_{t_n} - a)^-] \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{b-a} E_Q[\int_{t_0}^{t_n} e^{\mu s} |g_s^0| ds] + a\mu(t_n - t_0)\}. \end{aligned}$$

This with  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[\cdot] \leq E_Q[\cdot] \leq \mathcal{E}^{\mu}[\cdot]$  derives the upcrossing inequality.  $\square$

*Remark 3.7.* Since,  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[\cdot]_{\mu=0} = \mathcal{E}^{\mu}[\cdot]_{\mu=0} = E[\cdot]$ , thus in the case where  $\mu = 0$  and  $g_s^0 \equiv 0$ , the about upcrossing inequality becomes a classical one:

$$(b-a)E[U_a^b(Y, n)] \leq E[(Y_{t_n} - a)^-].$$

To extend the above upcrossing inequality to denumerable sets, following (Peng, 1997 [Peng1997b]), we now extend the domain of  $\mathcal{E}^g[\cdot]$  from  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  to a larger space. We consider

$$L_2^0(\mathcal{F}_T) := \{X^+ \in L^0(\mathcal{F}_T), X^- \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)\}.$$

We need the following result:

**Lemma 3.4.** *Let  $X \in L_2^0(\mathcal{F}_T)$  and let  $\{X_i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  and  $\{X'_i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  be two non decreasing sequences in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  such that  $X_i \nearrow X$ , a.s  $X'_i \nearrow X$  a.s.. Then we have*

$$\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{E}_g[X_i] = \lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{E}_g[X'_i].$$

*Proof.* We only need to consider the case where  $X_i \geq X'_i$ , a.s., for all  $i = 1, 2, \dots$ . In this case

$$\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{E}_g[X_i] \geq \lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{E}_g[X'_i].$$

On the other hand, for each fixed integer  $i_0$ , we have  $X_{i_0} \wedge X'_i \nearrow X_{i_0}$  in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ . It follows from the continuity of  $\mathcal{E}_g[\cdot]$  in  $L^2$  that  $\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{E}_g[X'_i] \geq \lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{E}_g[X_{i_0} \wedge X'_i] = \mathcal{E}_g[X_{i_0}]$ . Thus  $\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{E}_g[X'_i] \geq \lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{E}_g[X_i]$ .  $\square$

**Definition 3.6.** *For each  $X \in L_2^0(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , we define*

$$\mathcal{E}_g[X] = \lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{E}_g[X_i],$$

*where  $\{X_i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  is a non decreasing sequence in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  such that  $X_i \nearrow X$ , a.s.*



From the above lemma, the functional  $\mathcal{E}_g[\cdot] : L_2^0(\mathcal{F}_T) \rightarrow R \cup \{+\infty\}$  is clearly defined. We are interested in the situation where  $g = g_{-\mu}(z) = -\mu|z|$ .

**Lemma 3.5.** *For each nonnegative  $X \in L_2^0(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , if  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[X] = \mathcal{E}_{g_{-\mu}}[X] < +\infty$ , then  $X < +\infty$ ,  $dP$ -a.s.*

*Proof.* We set  $A := \{\omega \in \Omega : X(\omega) = +\infty\}$ . It is clear that  $\lambda 1_A \leq X$ , a.s, for each  $\lambda \in [0, \infty)$ . Thus, by comparison theorem,

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[\lambda 1_A] \leq \mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[X], \quad \forall \lambda \in [0, \infty).$$

But we have  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[\lambda 1_A] = \lambda \mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[1_A]$  and, by strict comparison theorem,  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[1_A] > 0 \Leftrightarrow P(A) > 0$ . It follows that  $A$  must be a  $P$ -zero subset. The proof is complete.  $\square$

Let  $Y = (Y_t)_{t \in [0, T]}$  be an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -adapted process,  $u = \{t_1, t_2, \dots, t_n\} \subset [0, T]$  with  $t_1 < \dots < t_n$ . We denote by  $U_a^b(Y, u)$  the upcrossing number of  $\{Y_{t_1}, \dots, Y_{t_n}\}$ . For any subset  $D$  of  $[0, T]$ , define

$$U_a^b(Y, D) := \sup\{U_a^b(Y, u) : u \text{ is a finite subset of } D\}.$$

If  $D$  is a denumerable dense subset of  $[0, T]$ . Let  $\{u_n\}_{n=1}^\infty$  be a sequence of finite subsets in  $D$  such that  $u_n \subset u_{n+1}$  for each  $n$  with  $\cup_n u_n = D$ . It is clear that

$$U_a^b(Y, D) = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} U_a^b(Y, u_n).$$

**Theorem 3.6.** *We assume that  $g$  satisfies (i) and (ii) of (34). Let  $Y = (Y_t)_{t \in [0, T]}$  be a  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supermartingale,  $D$  be a denumerable dense subset of  $[0, T]$ . Then for each  $a, b \in R$ ,  $r, s \in [0, T]$  such that  $a < b$  and  $r < s$ , we have*

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[U_a^b(Y, D \cap [r, s])] \leq \frac{e^{2\mu(s-r)}}{b-a} \{\mathcal{E}^\mu[(Y_s - a)^-] + \mathcal{E}^\mu\left[\int_r^s e^{\mu t} |g_t^0| dt\right] + a\mu(s-r)\}, \quad (67)$$

where  $\mu$  is the Lipschitz constant of  $g$  and  $g_s^0 = g(s, 0, 0)$ . In particular

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[U_a^b(Y, D)] \leq \frac{e^{2\mu T}}{b-a} \{\mathcal{E}^\mu[(Y_T - a)^-] + \mathcal{E}^\mu\left[\int_0^T e^{\mu t} |g_t^0| dt\right] + a\mu T\}. \quad (68)$$

Moreover,  $U_a^b(Y, D) < \infty$ , a.s.

*Proof.* Let  $u_n = \{t_0, t_1, t_2, \dots, t_n\}$  be defined as the above with  $t_0 = r$  and  $t_n = s$ . Since  $\{U_a^b(Y, u_n)\}_{n=1}^\infty$  is an increasing and positive sequence such that  $U_a^b(Y, u_n) \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  for each  $n$ , it follows that

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[U_a^b(Y, D \cap [r, s])] = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[U_a^b(Y, D \cap u_n)].$$

The sequence  $\{\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[U_a^b(Y, D \cap u_n)]\}_{n=1}^\infty$  is increasing and uniformly bounded by the left hand of (65). It follows that  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[U_a^b(Y, D \cap [r, s])]$  and  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[U_a^b(Y, D)]$  are well-defined and bounded. By Lemma 3.5,  $U_a^b(Y, D) < \infty$ , a.s.  $\square$

*Remark 3.8.* From the above upcrossing inequality we can deduce a downcrossing inequality of a  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -submartingale  $Y$ . In fact, from the relation  $D_a^b(Y, n) = U_{-b}^{-a}(-Y, n)$ , one can directly obtain the downcrossing inequality of  $D_a^b(Y, n)$  of a  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -submartingale  $Y$  from the corresponding upcrossing inequality of  $U_{-b}^{-a}(-Y, n)$  of  $\mathcal{E}^{\bar{g}}$ -supermartingale  $-Y$ , where  $\bar{g}(s, y, z) := -g(s, -y, -z)$ .

From the above result, and combine the condition  $E[\sup_{t \in [0, T]} |Y_t|^2] < \infty$ , we have the following classical result.

**Theorem 3.7.** *We assume that  $g$  satisfies (i) and (ii) of (34). Let  $Y = (Y_t)_{t \in [0, T]}$  be a  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supermartingale,  $D$  be a denumerable dense subset of  $[0, T]$ . Then for almost all  $\omega$  and for any  $t \in [0, T]$ ,  $\lim_{s \in D, s \searrow t} Y_s$  and  $\lim_{s \in D, s \nearrow t} Y_s$  exist and are finite. Furthermore the process  $(\bar{Y}_t)_{t \in [0, T]}$  defined by*

$$\bar{Y}_t := \lim_{s \in D, s \searrow t} Y_s, \quad t \in [0, T]$$

*is an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -adapted process with  $E[\sup_{0 \leq t \leq T} |\bar{Y}_t|^2] < \infty$ . If  $g$  also satisfies (iii) of (34), then  $\bar{Y}$  is an  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supermartingale.*

*Proof.* We only need to prove that  $\bar{Y}$  is an  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supermartingale. The rest of the proofs can be find in, e.g., [HWY1992]. Let  $s < t$ ,  $s, t \in [0, T]$  and  $s_n \in D$ ,  $s_n < t$ ,  $s_n \downarrow s$ ,  $t_n \in D$ ,  $t_n \downarrow t$  and  $s_n \leq t_n$ . Then, for  $m \geq n$ ,

$$\mathcal{E}_{s_m, t_n}^g[Y_{t_n}] \leq Y_{s_m}.$$

We fix  $n$  and let  $m \rightarrow \infty$ . We have  $Y_{s_m} \rightarrow \bar{Y}_s$  and, by  $\mathcal{E}_{s, t_n}^g[Y_{t_n}]_{s \in [0, t_n]} \in S_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, t_n)$ , we also have  $\mathcal{E}_{s_m, t_n}^g[Y_{t_n}] \rightarrow \mathcal{E}_{s, t_n}^g[Y_{t_n}]$ , we derive

$$\mathcal{E}_{s, t_n}^g[Y_{t_n}] \leq \bar{Y}_s, \quad \text{a.s.}$$

Now let  $n \rightarrow \infty$ . We have  $Y_{t_n} \rightarrow \bar{Y}_t$ , in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ . It follows that

$$|\mathcal{E}_{s, t_n}^g[Y_{t_n}] - \mathcal{E}_{s, t}^g[\bar{Y}_t]| \leq |\mathcal{E}_{s, t_n}^g[Y_{t_n}] - \mathcal{E}_{s, t_n}^g[\bar{Y}_t]| + |\mathcal{E}_{s, t_n}^g[\bar{Y}_t] - \mathcal{E}_{s, t}^g[\bar{Y}_t]|.$$

We then can apply a technique used in the estimate of (141) to prove that  $|\mathcal{E}_{s, t_n}^g[Y_{t_n}] - \mathcal{E}_{s, t}^g[\bar{Y}_t]| \rightarrow 0$ . Thus

$$\mathcal{E}_{s, t}^g[\bar{Y}_t] \leq \bar{Y}_s.$$

□

*Remark 3.9.* By this proposition we can prove that, in many typical cases a  $g$ -supermartingale  $Y$  admits a RCLL modification. More details on this topic will be given in Lemma 4.8, for a more general situation. We will always take its RCLL version.

**Lemma 3.6.** *Let  $Y$  be an RCLL  $g$ -supermartingale on  $[0, T]$  and let  $\sigma$  and  $\tau$  be two  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -stopping times. Then we have*

$$\mathcal{E}_g[Y_\tau | \mathcal{F}_\sigma] \leq Y_{\tau \wedge \sigma}.$$

*Proof.* See Theorem 7.4.

### 3.3 A Monotonic Limit Theorem of BSDE

For a given stopping time  $\tau \leq T < \infty$ , we consider a process  $(y_t)$  the solution of the following BSDE

$$y_t = \xi + \int_{t \wedge \tau}^{\tau} g(y_s, z_s, s) ds + (A_\tau - A_{t \wedge \tau}) - \int_{t \wedge \tau}^{\tau} z_s dB_s \quad (69)$$

where  $\xi \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_\tau)$ ,  $A$  is a given RCLL increasing process with  $\mathbf{E}[(A_\tau)^2] < \infty$ . The following terms will be frequently used.

**Definition 3.7.** *If  $(y, z)$  is a solution of BSDE (69) then we call  $(y_t)$  a  $g$ -supersolution on  $[0, \tau]$ . If  $A_t \equiv 0$  on  $[0, \tau]$ , then we call  $y$  a  $g$ -solution on  $[0, \tau]$ .*

We recall that a  $g$ -solution  $y$  on  $[0, \tau]$  is uniquely determined if its terminal condition  $y_\tau = \xi$  is given, a  $g$ -supersolution  $y$  on  $[0, \tau]$  is uniquely determined if  $y_\tau$  and  $(A_t)_{0 \leq t \leq \tau}$  are given. If  $y$  is a  $g$ -solution and  $y'$  is a  $g$ -supersolution on  $[0, \tau]$  such that  $y_\tau \leq y'_\tau$  a.s., then for all stopping time  $\sigma \leq \tau$  we have also  $y_\sigma \leq y'_\sigma$ .

**Proposition 3.12.** *Let  $y$  be a  $g$ -supersolution defined on an interval  $[0, \tau]$ . Then there is a unique  $z \in L^2(0, \tau; \mathbf{R}^d)$  and a unique increasing RCLL process  $A$  on  $[0, \tau]$  with  $\mathbf{E}[(A_\tau)^2] < \infty$  such that the triple  $(y_t, z_t, A_t)$  satisfies (69).*

*Proof.* If both  $(y, z, A)$  and  $(y, z', A')$  satisfy (69), then we apply Itô's formula to  $(y_t - y_t')^2 (\equiv 0)$  on  $[0, \tau]$  and take expectation:

$$\mathbf{E} \int_0^\tau |z_s - z'_s|^2 ds + \mathbf{E} \left[ \sum_{t \in (0, \tau)} (\Delta(A_t - A'_t))^2 \right] = 0.$$

Thus  $z_t \equiv z'_t$ . From this it follows that  $A_t \equiv A'_t$ . □

Thus we can define

**Definition 3.8.** *Let  $y$  be a  $g$ -supersolution on  $[0, \tau]$  and let  $(y, A, z)$  be the related unique triple in the sense of BSDE (69). Then we call  $(A, z)$  the (unique) decomposition of  $(y_t)$ .*

Let us now consider the following sequence of  $g$ -supersolution  $\{y^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  on  $[0, T]$ , i.e.,

$$y_t^i = y_T^i + \int_t^T g(y_s^i, z_s^i, s) ds + (A_T^i - A_t^i) - \int_t^T z_s^i dB_s, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots \quad (70)$$

Here  $A^i$  are RCLL increasing processes with  $A_0^i = 0$  and  $\mathbf{E}[(A_T^i)^2] < \infty$ .

The following theorem shows that the limit of  $\{y^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  is still a  $g$ -supersolution.

**Theorem 3.8.** *We assume that  $g$  satisfies (i) and (ii) of Assumptions (34). For each  $i = 1, 2, \dots$ , let  $A^i$  be a continuous and increasing processes with  $A_0^i = 0$  and  $\mathbf{E}[(A_T^i)^2] < \infty$  and  $(y^i, z^i)$  be the solution of BSDE (70). If, as  $i \rightarrow \infty$ ,  $\{y^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  converges monotonically up to a process  $y$  with  $\mathbf{E}[\text{esssup}_{0 \leq t \leq T} |y_t|^2] < \infty$ . Then this limit  $y$  is still a  $g$ -supersolution, i.e., there exists  $z \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$  and an RCLL increasing process  $A$  with  $\mathbf{E}[(A_T)^2] < \infty$  such that*

$$y_t = y_T + \int_t^T g(y_s, z_s, s) ds + (A_T - A_t) - \int_t^T z_s dB_s, \quad t \in [0, T]. \quad (71)$$

To prove this theorem, we need the following lemma. This lemma says that both  $\{z^i\}$  and  $\{(A_T^i)^2\}$  are uniformly bounded in  $L^2$ :

**Lemma 3.7.** *Under the assumptions of Theorem 3.8, there exists a constant  $C$  that is independent of  $i$  such that*

$$\begin{aligned} (i) \quad & \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |z_s^i|^2 ds \leq C, \\ (ii) \quad & \mathbf{E}[(A_T^i)^2] \leq C. \end{aligned} \quad (72)$$

*Proof.* From BSDE (70), we have

$$\begin{aligned} A_T^i &= y_0^i - y_T^i - \int_0^T g(y_s^i, z_s^i, s) ds + \int_0^T z_s^i dB_s \\ &\leq |y_0^i| + |y_T^i| + \int_0^T [|\nu|y_s^i| + \mu|z_s^i| + |g(0, 0, s)|] ds + \left| \int_0^T z_s^i dB_s \right|. \end{aligned}$$

We observe that  $|y_t^i|$  is dominated by  $|y_t^1| + |y_t|$ . Thus there exists a constant, independent of  $i$ , such that

$$\mathbf{E} \left[ \sup_{0 \leq t \leq T} |y_t^i|^2 \right] \leq C. \quad (73)$$

It follows that, there exists a constant  $C_1$ , independent of  $i$ , such that

$$\mathbf{E}|A_T^i|^2 \leq C_1 + 2(1 + \mu^2 T) \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |z_s^i|^2 ds. \quad (74)$$

On the other hand, we use Itô's formula applied to  $|y_t^i|^2$ :

$$|y_0^i|^2 + \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |z_s^i|^2 ds = \mathbf{E}|y_T^i|^2 + 2\mathbf{E} \int_0^T y_s^i g(y_s^i, z_s^i, s) ds + 2\mathbf{E} \int_0^T y_s^i dA_s^i$$

The last two terms are bounded by

$$\begin{aligned} 2y_s^i g(y_s^i, z_s^i, s) &\leq 2|y_s^i|(|\nu|y_s^i| + \mu|z_s^i| + |g(0, 0, s)|) \\ &\leq 2(\nu + \mu^2)|y_s^i|^2 + \frac{1}{2}|z_s^i|^2 + |g(0, 0, s)| \end{aligned}$$

and  $2\mathbf{E} \int_0^T |y_s^i| dA_s^i \leq 2[\mathbf{E} \sup_{0 \leq s \leq T} |y_s^i|^2]^{1/2} [\mathbf{E} |A_T^i|^2]^{1/2}$ . Thus

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |z_s^i|^2 ds &\leq C + 4[\mathbf{E} \sup_{0 \leq s \leq T} |y_s^i|^2]^{1/2} [\mathbf{E} |A_T^i|^2]^{1/2} \\ &\leq C + 16(1 + \mu^2 T) \mathbf{E} [\sup_{0 \leq s \leq T} |y_s^i|^2] + \frac{1}{4(1 + \mu^2 T)} \mathbf{E} |A_T^i|^2 \\ &= C_1 + \frac{1}{4(1 + \mu^2 T)} \mathbf{E} |A_T^i|^2, \end{aligned}$$

where, from (73), the constants  $C$  and  $C_1$  are all independent of  $i$ . This with (74) it follows that (72)–(i) and then (72)–(ii) holds true. The proof is complete.  $\square$

Combining this Lemma with Theorem 7.2 in Appendix, we can easily prove Theorem 3.8.

**Proof of Theorem 3.8.** In (70), we set  $g_t^i := -g(y_t^i, z_t^i, t)$ ; Since  $\{z^i\}$  is bounded in  $L_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$ , thanks to the monotonic limit theorem of Itô processes (see Appendix: Theorem 7.2), there exists a  $z \in L_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$  such that, for each  $p \in [0, 2)$ ,  $\{z^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  strongly converges to  $z$  in  $L_{\mathcal{F}}^p(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$ .

As result,  $\{g^i\} = \{-g(y^i, z^i, \cdot)\}$  also strongly converges in  $L_{\mathcal{F}}^p(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$  to  $g^0$  and

$$g^0(s) = -g(y_s, z_s, s), \quad \text{a.s., a.e.}$$

From this it follows immediately that  $(y, z)$  is the solution of the BSDE (71). The proof is complete.  $\square$

### 3.4 $g$ -Martingales and (Nonlinear) $g$ -Supermartingale Decomposition Theorem

More general than the martingales under  $g$ -expectations, we now introduce the notion of  $g$ -martingales under  $g$ -evaluations. Under this general framework, we will prove a general  $g$ -supermartingale decomposition theorem of Doob–Meyer’s type.

**Definition 3.9.** An  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -progressively measurable real-valued process  $Y$  with

$$\mathbf{E}[\text{ess sup}_{0 \leq t \leq T} |Y_t|^2] < \infty, \quad \forall T < \infty$$

is called a  $g$ -martingale (resp.  $g$ -supermartingale,  $g$ -submartingale) on  $[0, T]$  if for each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$ ,

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[Y_t] = Y_s, \quad (\text{resp. } \leq Y_s, \geq Y_s) \text{ a.s.}$$

In this subsection we will consider  $g$ -supermartingales. By Comparison Theorem of BSDE, it is easy to prove the following result

**Proposition 3.13.** *We assume that  $g$  satisfies (i) and (ii) of (34). Let  $(A_t)_{0 \leq t < \infty}$  be an RCLL increasing (resp. decreasing) process with  $\mathbf{E}[(A_T)^2] < \infty$  for each  $T > 0$ . Let  $(y, z)$  be the solution of the following BSDE, for each  $T > 0$ ,*

$$y_t = y_T + \int_t^T g(y_s, z_s, s) ds + (A_T - A_t) - \int_t^T z_s dB_s, \quad t \in [0, T], \quad (75)$$

*Then  $(y_t)_{0 \leq t \leq T}$  is a  $g$ -supermartingale (resp.  $g$ -submartingale).*

In this section we are concerned with the inverse problem: can we say that a right-continuous  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supermartingale is also a  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supersolution? This problem is more difficult since it is in fact a nonlinear version of Doob-Meyer Decomposition Theorem. We claim

**Theorem 3.9.** *We assume that  $g$  satisfies (i) and (ii) of (34). Let  $(Y_t)$  be a right-continuous  $g$ -supermartingale on  $[0, T]$ . Then  $(Y_t)$  is an  $g$ -supersolution: there exists a unique RCLL increasing process  $(A_t)$  with  $\mathbf{E}[(A_T)^2] < \infty$ , for each  $T > 0$ , such that  $(Y_t)$  coincides with the unique solution  $(y_t)$  of the BSDE. For each  $T > 0$ ,*

$$y_t = Y_T + \int_t^T g(y_s, z_s, s) ds + (A_T - A_t) - \int_t^T z_s dB_s, \quad t \in [0, T], \quad (76)$$

In order to prove this theorem, we consider the following family of BSDE parameterized by  $i = 1, 2, \dots$ .

$$y_t^i = Y_T + \int_t^T g(y_s^i, z_s^i, s) ds + i \int_t^T (Y_s - y_s^i) ds - \int_t^T z_s^i dB_s. \quad (77)$$

An important observation is that, for each  $i$ ,  $y_t^i$  is always bounded from above by  $Y_t$ . Thus  $y^i$  is a  $g$ -supersolution on  $[0, T]$ :

**Lemma 3.8.** *We have, for each  $i = 1, 2, \dots$ ,*

$$Y_t \geq y_t^i, \quad \forall t \in [0, T], \quad a.s..$$

*Proof.* For a  $\delta > 0$  and a given integer  $i > 0$ , we define

$$\sigma^{i, \delta} := \inf\{t; y_t^i \geq Y_t + \delta\} \wedge T.$$

If  $P(\sigma^{i, \delta} < T) = 0$ , for all  $i$  and  $\delta$ , then the proof is done. If it is not the case, then there exist  $\delta > 0$  and a positive integer  $i$  such that  $P(\sigma^{i, \delta} < T) > 0$ . We can then define the following stopping times

$$\tau := \inf\{t \geq \sigma^{i, \delta}; y_t^i \leq Y_t\}$$

It is clear that  $\sigma^{i, \delta} \leq \tau \leq T$ . Since  $Y - y^i$  is RCLL, we have

$$y_\tau^i \leq Y_\tau.$$

But since  $(Y(s) - y^i(s)) \leq 0$  on  $[\sigma^{i,\delta}, \tau]$ , by monotonicity of  $\mathcal{E}^g[\cdot]$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} y_{\sigma^{i,\delta}}^i &\leq \mathcal{E}_{\sigma^{i,\delta}, \tau}^g[y_\tau^i | \mathcal{F}_{\sigma^{i,\delta}}] \\ &\leq \mathcal{E}_{\sigma^{i,\delta}, \tau}^g[Y_\tau | \mathcal{F}_{\sigma^{i,\delta}}] \\ &\leq Y_{\sigma^{i,\delta}} \text{ a.s.} \end{aligned}$$

The last step is due to Theorem 7.3. But on the other hand, we have  $P(\sigma^{i,\delta} < T) > 0$  and, by the definition of  $\sigma^{i,\delta}$ ,  $y_{\sigma^{i,\delta}}^i \geq Y_{\sigma^{i,\delta}} + \delta$  on  $\{\sigma^{i,\delta} < T\}$ . This induces a contradiction. The proof is complete.  $\square$

*Remark 3.10.* From the above result, the term  $i(Y_s - y_s^i)$  in (77) equals to  $i(Y_s - y_s^i)^+$ . By Comparison Theorem  $y_t^i$  are pushed up to be above the supermartingale  $Y_t$ . But in fact they can never surpass  $Y_t$ . We will see that this effect will force  $y^i$  to converge to the supermartingale  $Y$  itself. Thus, by Limit Theorem 3.8  $Y$  itself is also a form of (76). Specifically, we have:

**Proof of Theorem 3.9.** The uniqueness is due to the uniqueness of  $g$ -supersolution i.e. Proposition 3.12. We now prove the existence. We rewrite BSDE (77) as

$$y_t^i = Y_T + \int_t^T g(y_s^i, z_s^i, s) ds + A_T^i - A_t^i - \int_t^T z_s^i dB_s,$$

where we denote

$$A_t^i := i \int_0^t (Y_s - y_s^i) ds.$$

From Lemma 3.8,  $Y_t - y_t^i = |Y_t - y_t^i|$ . It follows from the Comparison Theorem that  $y_t^i \leq y_t^{i+1}$ . Thus  $\{y^i\}$  is a sequence of continuous  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supersolutions that is monotonically converges up to a process  $(y_t)$ . Moreover  $(y_t)$  is bounded from above by  $Y_t$ . It is then easy to check that all conditions in Theorem 3.8 are satisfied.  $(y_t)$  is a  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supersolution on  $[0, T]$  of the following form.

$$y_t = Y_T + \int_t^T g(y_s, z_s, s) ds + (A_T - A_t) - \int_t^T z_s dB_s, \quad t \in [0, T],$$

where  $(A_t)$  is a RCLL increasing process. It then remains to prove that  $y = Y$ . From Lemma 3.7-(ii) we have

$$\mathbf{E}[|A_T^i|^2] = i^2 \mathbf{E} \left[ \int_0^T |Y_t - y_t^i| dt \right]^2 \leq C.$$

It then follows that  $Y_t \equiv y_t$ . The proof is complete  $\square$ .

## 4 Finding the Mechanism: Is an $\mathcal{F}$ -Expectation a $g$ -Expectation?

### 4.1 $\mathcal{E}^\mu$ -Dominated $\mathcal{F}$ -Expectations

Now we will study  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectations dominated by  $\mathcal{E}^\mu = \mathcal{E}^{g_\mu}$ , with  $g_\mu(z) := \mu|z|$ , for some large enough  $\mu > 0$ , according to the following

**Definition 4.1. ( $\mathcal{E}^\mu$ -domination)** Given  $\mu > 0$ , we say that an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation  $\mathcal{E}$  is dominated by  $\mathcal{E}^\mu$  if

$$\mathcal{E}[X + Y] - \mathcal{E}[X] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y], \quad \forall X, Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T) \quad (78)$$

By Proposition 3.6, for any  $g$  satisfying (i), (ii) (iii") of (34), the associated  $g$ -expectation is dominated by  $\mathcal{E}^\mu$ , where  $\mu$  is the Lipschitz constant in (34).

**Lemma 4.1.** If  $\mathcal{E}$  is dominated by  $\mathcal{E}^\mu$  for some  $\mu > 0$ , then

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[Y] \leq \mathcal{E}[X + Y] - \mathcal{E}[X] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y]. \quad (79)$$

*Proof.* It is a simple consequence of

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] = -\mathcal{E}^\mu[-Y|\mathcal{F}_t].$$

□

**Lemma 4.2.** If  $\mathcal{E}$  is dominated by  $\mathcal{E}^\mu$  for some  $\mu > 0$ , then  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  is a continuous operator on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  in the following sense:

$$\exists C > 0, \quad |\mathcal{E}[\xi_1] - \mathcal{E}[\xi_2]| \leq C \|\xi_1 - \xi_2\|_{L^2}, \quad \forall \xi_1, \xi_2 \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T). \quad (80)$$

*Proof.* The claim follows easily from Lemma 4.1 above and Lemma 3.3. □

From now on we will deal with  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectations  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  also satisfying the following condition:

$$\mathcal{E}[X + Y|\mathcal{F}_t] = \mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t] + Y, \quad \forall X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T) \quad \text{and} \quad Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t) \quad (81)$$

Recall that, when  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  is a  $g$ -expectation, (81) means that  $g$  satisfies (34)–(iii") (see (57)). We observe that an expectation  $E_Q[\cdot]$  under a Girsanov transformation  $\frac{dQ}{dP}$  satisfies this assumption.

We need to introduce a new notation: for a given  $\zeta \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , we consider the mapping  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta[\cdot]$  defined by

$$\mathcal{E}_\zeta[X] := \mathcal{E}[X + \zeta] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta] : L^2(\mathcal{F}_T) \mapsto \mathbb{R}. \quad (82)$$



**Lemma 4.3.** *If  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  is an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation satisfying (78) and (81), then the mapping  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta[\cdot]$  is also an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation satisfying (78) and (81). Its conditional expectation under  $\mathcal{F}_t$  is*

$$\mathcal{E}_\zeta[X|\mathcal{F}_t] = \mathcal{E}[X + \zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t]. \quad (83)$$

*Proof.* It is easily seen that  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta[\cdot]$  is a nonlinear expectation.

We now prove that the notion  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta[X|\mathcal{F}_t]$  defined in (83) is actually the conditional expectation induced by  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta[\cdot]$  under  $\mathcal{F}_t$ .

Indeed, put  $G(X, \zeta, \mathcal{F}_t) = \mathcal{E}[X + \zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t]$ . We want to show that, for all  $A \in \mathcal{F}_t$ ,  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta(G(X, \zeta, \mathcal{F}_t)1_A) = \mathcal{E}_\zeta(X1_A)$ . Computations give:

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_\zeta[G(X, \zeta, \mathcal{F}_t)] &= \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[X + \zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] + \zeta] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta] \quad (\text{by (9)}) \\ &= \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[X + \zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] + \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t]] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta] \quad (\text{by (81)}) \\ &= \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[X + \zeta|\mathcal{F}_t]] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[X + \zeta] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta]. \end{aligned}$$

Thus we have

$$\mathcal{E}_\zeta[G(X, \zeta, \mathcal{F}_t)] = \mathcal{E}_\zeta[X], \quad \forall X. \quad (84)$$

Now for each  $A \in \mathcal{F}_t$ , we have,

$$\begin{aligned} G(X1_A, \zeta, \mathcal{F}_t) &= \mathcal{E}[X1_A + \zeta1_A + \zeta1_{A^c}|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[(X + \zeta)1_A + \zeta1_{A^c}|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[X + \zeta|\mathcal{F}_t]1_A + \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t]1_{A^c} - \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] \\ &= (\mathcal{E}[X + \zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t])1_A \\ &= G(X, \zeta, \mathcal{F}_t)1_A. \end{aligned}$$

From this with (84) it follows that  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta[X|\mathcal{F}_t]$  satisfies (7):

$$\mathcal{E}_\zeta[G(X, \zeta, \mathcal{F}_t)1_A] = \mathcal{E}_\zeta[G(X1_A, \zeta, \mathcal{F}_t)] = \mathcal{E}_\zeta[X1_A], \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_t.$$

Thus  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta[\cdot]$  is an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation with  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta[\cdot|\mathcal{F}_t]$  given by (83).

We now check that (78) is satisfied. For each  $X, Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_\zeta[X + Y] - \mathcal{E}_\zeta[X] &= (\mathcal{E}[X + Y + \zeta] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta]) - (\mathcal{E}[X + \zeta] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta]) \\ &= \mathcal{E}[X + Y + \zeta] - \mathcal{E}[X + \zeta]. \end{aligned}$$

Since  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  satisfies (78),  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta[\cdot]$  satisfies

$$\mathcal{E}_\zeta[X + Y] - \mathcal{E}_\zeta[X] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y].$$

Finally, let  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ ; since  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  satisfies property (81), thus

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_\zeta[X + Y|\mathcal{F}_t] &= \mathcal{E}[X + \zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[\zeta|\mathcal{F}_t] + Y \\ &= \mathcal{E}_\zeta[X|\mathcal{F}_t] + Y. \end{aligned}$$

Thus  $\mathcal{E}_\zeta[\cdot]$  also satisfies property (81). The proof is complete.  $\square$

**Lemma 4.4.** *Let  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  be an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation satisfying (78) and (81). Then, for each  $t \leq T$ , we have a.s.*

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[X|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}_\zeta[X|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[X|\mathcal{F}_t], \quad \forall X, \zeta \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T).$$

This lemma is a simple consequence of the following one, whose proof is inspired by [BCHMP2000].

**Lemma 4.5.** *Let  $\mathcal{E}_1[\cdot]$  and  $\mathcal{E}_2[\cdot]$  be two  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectations satisfying (78) and (81). If*

$$\mathcal{E}_1[X] \leq \mathcal{E}_2[X], \quad \forall X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T),$$

*then a.s. and for all  $t$ ,*

$$\mathcal{E}_1[X|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}_2[X|\mathcal{F}_t], \quad \forall X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T).$$

*Proof.* Indeed, for all  $Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , we have by (81)

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_1[Y - \mathcal{E}_1[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]] &= \mathcal{E}_1[\mathcal{E}_1[Y - \mathcal{E}_1[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]]|\mathcal{F}_t] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_1[\mathcal{E}_1[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}_1[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_1[0] = 0. \end{aligned}$$

On the other hand,

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_1[Y - \mathcal{E}_1[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]] &\leq \mathcal{E}_2[Y - \mathcal{E}_1[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_2[\mathcal{E}_2[Y - \mathcal{E}_1[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]]|\mathcal{F}_t]. \end{aligned}$$

Thus

$$\mathcal{E}_2[\mathcal{E}_2[Y|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}_1[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]] \geq 0, \quad \forall Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T).$$

Now, for a fixed  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , we set  $\eta = \mathcal{E}_2[X|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}_1[X|\mathcal{F}_t]$ . Since

$$\begin{aligned} \eta 1_{\{\eta < 0\}} &= 1_{\{\eta < 0\}} \mathcal{E}_2[X|\mathcal{F}_t] - 1_{\{\eta < 0\}} \mathcal{E}_1[X|\mathcal{F}_t] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_2[X 1_{\{\eta < 0\}}|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}_1[X 1_{\{\eta < 0\}}|\mathcal{F}_t], \end{aligned}$$

we have then

$$\mathcal{E}_2[\eta 1_{\{\eta < 0\}}] = 0.$$

But since  $\eta 1_{\{\eta < 0\}} \leq 0$ , it follows from the strict monotonicity of  $\mathcal{E}_2[\cdot]$  that  $\eta 1_{\{\eta < 0\}} = 0$  a.s.. Thus

$$\mathcal{E}_2[X|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}_1[X|\mathcal{F}_t] \geq 0 \quad \text{a.s.}$$

The proof is complete. □

**Lemma 4.6.** *If  $\mathcal{E}$  meets (78) and (81), there exists a positive constant  $C$  such that, for all  $X$  and  $Y$  in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , and for all  $t \geq 0$ ,*

$$\mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[X + Y|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t]] \leq C\|Y\|_{L^2}.$$

*Proof.* Indeed, Lemmas 4.3 and 4.4 above imply that

$$\begin{aligned}\mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[X + Y|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t]] &= \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}_X[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]] \\ &\leq \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]] \\ &\leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y|\mathcal{F}_t]] = \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y] \leq C\|Y\|_{L^2}.\end{aligned}$$

The last inequality is from Lemma 4.2. □

## 4.2 $\mathcal{F}_t$ -Consistent Martingales

In this subsection we assume that  $\mathcal{E}$  is an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation satisfying (78) for some  $\mu > 0$ , and (81) as well.

**Definition 4.2.** A process  $(X_t)_{t \in [0, T]} \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$  is called an  $\mathcal{E}$ -martingale (resp.  $\mathcal{E}$ -supermartingale, -submartingale) if for each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$

$$X_s = \mathcal{E}[X_t|\mathcal{F}_s], \quad (\text{resp. } \geq \mathcal{E}[X_t|\mathcal{F}_s], \leq \mathcal{E}[X_t|\mathcal{F}_s]).$$

**Lemma 4.7.** An  $\mathcal{E}^\mu$ -supermartingale  $(\xi_t)$  is both an  $\mathcal{E}$  - supermartingale and  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}$  - supermartingale. An  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}$  - submartingale  $(\xi_t)$  is both an  $\mathcal{E}$  - and  $\mathcal{E}^\mu$  - submartingale. An  $\mathcal{E}$  - martingale  $(\xi_t)$  is an  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}$  - supermartingale and an  $\mathcal{E}^\mu$ -submartingale.

*Proof.* It comes simply from the fact that, for each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$ ,

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[\xi_t|\mathcal{F}_s] \leq \mathcal{E}[\xi_t|\mathcal{F}_s] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[\xi_t|\mathcal{F}_s].$$

□

The next result is the first step in a procedure that will eventually prove that every  $\mathcal{E}$ -martingale admits continuous paths.

**Lemma 4.8.** For each  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  the process  $\mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t]$ ,  $t \in [0, T]$  admits a unique modification with a.s. RCLL paths.

*Proof.* We can deduce from Lemma 4.7 that the process  $\mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t]$ ,  $t \in [0, T]$ , is an  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}$ -supermartingale. Hence we can apply the downcrossing inequality of Proposition 3.11.

This downcrossing inequality tells us that  $\mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t]$ ,  $t \in [0, T]$  has  $P$ -a.s. finitely many downcrossings of every interval  $[a, b]$  with rational  $a < b$ . By classical methods, this imply the almost sure existence of left and right limits for the paths of  $\mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}]$ .

We thus can define  $Y_t = \lim_{s \searrow t} \mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_s]$ . For each  $A \in \mathcal{F}_t$ , we have that

$$Y_t 1_A = \lim_{s \in \tilde{\mathbf{Q}} \cap [0, T], s \nearrow t} \mathcal{E}[X | \mathcal{F}_s] 1_A, \text{ in } L^2(\mathcal{F}_T).$$

From Lemma 4.2, it follows that

$$\mathcal{E}[Y_t 1_A] = \lim_{s \in \tilde{\mathbf{Q}} \cap [0, T], s \nearrow t} \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[X | \mathcal{F}_s] 1_A].$$

But

$$\mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[X | \mathcal{F}_s] 1_A] = \mathcal{E}[1_A \mathcal{E}[X | \mathcal{F}_t]].$$

It follows that a.s.  $Y_t = \mathcal{E}[X | \mathcal{F}_t]$ .

Now it's again classical to prove, using the existence of left and right limits, that the process  $Y$  defined above is a RCLL modification of  $\mathcal{E}[X | \mathcal{F}_t]$ ,  $t \in [0, T]$ , and the lemma is proved.  $\square$

Henceforth, and without needing to recall it, we will always consider the RCLL modifications of the  $\mathcal{E}$ -martingales we have to deal with.

Lemma 4.8 has an immediate consequence as follows :

**Lemma 4.9.** *Let  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  be an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation satisfying (78) and (81). Then for each  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  and  $g \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$  the process  $\mathcal{E}[X + \int_t^T g_s ds | \mathcal{F}_t]$ ,  $t \in [0, T]$  is RCLL a.s.*

*Proof.* Indeed, we can write

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}[X + \int_t^T g_s ds | \mathcal{F}_t] &= \mathcal{E}[X + \int_0^T g_s ds - \int_0^t g_s ds | \mathcal{F}_t] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[X + \int_0^T g_s ds | \mathcal{F}_t] - \int_0^t g_s ds \end{aligned}$$

because of (81). The claim follows then easily from Lemma 4.8.  $\square$

**Lemma 4.10.** *For each  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , let*

$$y_t = \mathcal{E}[X | \mathcal{F}_t].$$

*Then there exists a pair  $(g(\cdot), z(\cdot)) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; R \times R^d)$  with*

$$|g_t| \leq \mu |z_t| \tag{85}$$

*such that*

$$y_t = X + \int_t^T g_s ds - \int_t^T z_s dB_s. \tag{86}$$

*Furthermore, take  $X' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , put  $y'_t = \mathcal{E}[X' | \mathcal{F}_t]$ , and let  $(g'(\cdot), z'(\cdot)) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; R \times R^d)$  be the corresponding pair. Then we have*

$$|g_t - g'_t| \leq \mu |z_t - z'_t| \tag{87}$$

*Proof.* Since

$$y_t = \mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t], \quad 0 \leq t \leq T,$$

is an  $\mathcal{E}$  - martingale, and since it is RCLL, it is a right-continuous  $\mathcal{E}^\mu$ -submartingale (resp.  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}$  - supermartingale). By the domination  $\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[X|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[X|\mathcal{F}_t]$ , we also have  $\mathbf{E}[\sup_{t \in [0, T]} |y_t|^2] < \infty$ . Thus, from the  $g$  - supermartingale decomposition theorem (Theorem 3.9) that there exist  $(z^\mu, A^\mu)$  and  $(z^{-\mu}, A^{-\mu})$  in  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}([0, T]; R \times R^d)$  with  $A^\mu$  and  $A^{-\mu}$  RCLL and increasing such that  $A^\mu(0) = 0$ ,  $A^{-\mu}(0) = 0$  and such that

$$y_t = y_T + \int_t^T \mu |z_s^\mu| ds - A_T^\mu + A_t^\mu - \int_t^T z_s^\mu dB_s$$

and

$$y_t = y_T - \int_t^T \mu |z_s^{-\mu}| ds + A_T^{-\mu} - A_t^{-\mu} - \int_t^T z_s^{-\mu} dB_s.$$

Hence, the martingale parts and the bounded variation parts of the above two processes must coincide:

$$\begin{aligned} z_t^\mu &\equiv z_t^{-\mu}, \\ -\mu |z_t^\mu| dt + dA_t^\mu &\equiv \mu |z_t^\mu| dt - dA_t^{-\mu}, \end{aligned}$$

whence

$$2\mu |z_t^\mu| dt \equiv dA_t^\mu + dA_t^{-\mu}.$$

It follows that  $A^\mu$  and  $A^{-\mu}$  are both absolutely continuous and we can write:

$$dA_t^\mu = a_t^\mu dt, \quad dA_t^{-\mu} = a_t^{-\mu} dt$$

with

$$0 \leq a_t^\mu, \quad 0 \leq a_t^{-\mu}.$$

We also have

$$a_t^\mu + a_t^{-\mu} \equiv 2\mu |z_t^\mu|,$$

so, if we define

$$\begin{aligned} z_t &= z_t^\mu \\ g_t &= \mu |z_t| - a_t^\mu, \end{aligned}$$

we get (86) and (85).

Now, we prove (87). We have

$$\begin{aligned} y_t - y'_t &= \mathcal{E}[X|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[X'|\mathcal{F}_t] \\ &= \mathcal{E}[X - X' + X'|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[X'|\mathcal{F}_t] \\ &= \mathcal{E}_{X'}[X - X'|\mathcal{F}_t] \end{aligned}$$

Recall (Lemma 4.3) that  $\mathcal{E}_{X'}[\cdot]$  is another  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation satisfying (78) and (81). Thus there also exists a pair  $(\tilde{g}(\cdot), \tilde{z}(\cdot)) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; R \times R^d)$  with

$$|\tilde{g}_t| \leq \mu |\tilde{z}_t| \quad (88)$$

such that the  $\mathcal{E}_{X'}$ -martingale  $y_t - y'_t$  satisfies

$$y_t - y'_t = X - X' + \int_t^T \tilde{g}_s ds - \int_t^T \tilde{z}_s dB_s.$$

On the other hand, we have

$$y_t - y'_t = X - X' + \int_t^T [g_s - g'_s] ds - \int_t^T [z_s - z'_s] dB_s.$$

It follows then that

$$\tilde{g}_t \equiv g_t - g'_t, \quad \text{and} \quad \tilde{z}_t \equiv z_t - z'_t.$$

This with (88) yields (87). The proof is complete.  $\square$

*Remark 4.1.* From the above lemma, the result of Lemma 4.9 can be improved to: for each  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  and  $g \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ , the process  $\mathcal{E}[X + \int_t^T g_s ds | \mathcal{F}_t]$ ,  $t \in [0, T]$  is continuous a.s..

### 4.3 BSDE under $\mathcal{F}_t$ -Consistent Nonlinear Expectations

Here again,  $\mathcal{E}$  denotes an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation satisfying (78) for some  $\mu > 0$ , and (81) as well. Let a function  $f$  be given

$$f(\omega, t, y) : \Omega \times [0, T] \times R \mapsto R$$

satisfying, for some constant  $C_1 > 0$ ,

$$\begin{cases} \text{(i)} & f(\cdot, y) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T), \quad \text{for each } y \in R; \\ \text{(ii)} & |f(t, y_1) - f(t, y_2)| \leq C_1 |y_1 - y_2|, \quad \forall y_1, y_2 \in R. \end{cases} \quad (89)$$

For a given terminal data  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , we consider the following type of equation:

$$Y_t = \mathcal{E}[X + \int_t^T f(s, Y_s) ds | \mathcal{F}_t] \quad (90)$$

**Theorem 4.1.** *We assume (89). Then there exists a unique process  $Y(\cdot)$  solution of (90). Moreover,  $Y(\cdot)$  admits continuous paths.*

*Proof.* Define a mapping  $\Lambda(y(\cdot)) : L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T) \mapsto L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$  by

$$\Lambda_t(y(\cdot)) := \mathcal{E}[X + \int_t^T f(s, y_s) ds | \mathcal{F}_t].$$

Using Lemma 78,

$$\Lambda_t(y_1(\cdot)) - \Lambda_t(y_2(\cdot)) \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu \left[ \int_t^T (f(s, y_1(s)) - f(s, y_2(s))) ds | \mathcal{F}_t \right].$$

Thus

$$\begin{aligned} |\Lambda_t(y_1(\cdot)) - \Lambda_t(y_2(\cdot))| &\leq \mathcal{E}^\mu \left[ \int_t^T |f(s, y_1(s)) - f(s, y_2(s))| ds | \mathcal{F}_t \right] \\ &\leq C_1 \mathcal{E}^\mu \left[ \int_t^T |y_1(s) - y_2(s)| ds | \mathcal{F}_t \right], \text{ by (89).} \end{aligned}$$

Using Lemma 3.3, it follows that

$$\begin{aligned} E[|\Lambda_t(y_1(\cdot)) - \Lambda_t(y_2(\cdot))|^2] &\leq C_1^2 \mathbf{E} \left[ \mathcal{E}^\mu \left[ \int_t^T |y_1(s) - y_2(s)| ds | \mathcal{F}_t \right]^2 \right] \\ &\leq C_1^2 e^{\mu^2(T-t)} \mathbf{E} \left[ \int_t^T |y_1(s) - y_2(s)|^2 ds \right]^2 \\ &\leq C_2 \mathbf{E} \left[ \int_t^T |y_1(s) - y_2(s)|^2 ds \right], \end{aligned}$$

where  $C_2 := TC_1^2 e^{\mu^2 T}$ .

We observe that, for any finite number  $\beta$ , the following two norms are equivalent in  $L_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$

$$\mathbf{E} \int_0^T |\phi_s|^2 ds \sim \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |\phi_s|^2 e^{\beta s} ds.$$

Thus we multiply  $e^{2C_2 t}$  on both sides of the above inequality and then integrate them on  $[0, T]$ . It follows that

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |\Lambda_t(y) - \Lambda_t(y')|^2 e^{2C_2 t} dt &\leq C_2 \mathbf{E} \int_0^T e^{2C_2 t} \int_t^T |y_s - y'_s|^2 ds dt \\ &= C_2 \mathbf{E} \int_0^T \int_0^s e^{2C_2 t} dt |y_s - y'_s|^2 ds \\ &= (2C_2)^{-1} C_2 \mathbf{E} \int_0^T (e^{2C_2 s} - 1) |y_s - y'_s|^2 ds. \end{aligned}$$

We then have

$$\mathbf{E} \int_0^T |\Lambda_t(y) - \Lambda_t(y')|^2 e^{2C_2 t} dt \leq \frac{1}{2} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |y_t - y'_t|^2 e^{2C_2 t} dt.$$

Namely,  $\Lambda$  is a contraction mapping on  $L_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$ . It follows that this mapping has a unique fixed point  $Y$ :

$$Y_t = \mathcal{E} \left[ X + \int_t^T f(s, Y_s) ds | \mathcal{F}_t \right].$$

Finally, Lemma 4.9 and Remark 4.1 proves that the solution of (90) admits continuous paths, and the proof is complete.  $\square$

**Theorem 4.2. (Comparison Theorem).** *Let  $Y$  be the solution of (90) and let  $Y'$  be the solution of*

$$Y'_t = \mathcal{E}[X' + \int_t^T [f(s, Y'_s) + \phi_s] ds | \mathcal{F}_t]$$

where  $X' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  and  $\phi \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ . If

$$X' \geq X, \quad \phi_t \geq 0, \quad dP \times dt\text{-a.e.}, \quad (91)$$

then we have

$$Y'_t \geq Y_t, \quad dP \times dt\text{-a.e.} \quad (92)$$

(92) becomes equality if and only if (91) become equalities.

*Proof.* We begin with the case  $\phi_t \equiv 0$ . For each  $\delta > 0$ , we define

$$\tau_1^\delta = \inf\{t \geq 0; Y'_t \leq Y_t - \delta\} \wedge T.$$

It is clear that if, for all  $\delta > 0$ ,  $\tau_1^\delta = T$  a.s., then (92) holds. Now if for some  $\delta > 0$  we have

$$P(A) > 0, \quad \text{with } A = \{\tau_1^\delta < T\} \in \mathcal{F}_{\tau_1^\delta}$$

we then can define

$$\tau_2 = \inf\{t \geq \tau_1^\delta; Y'_t \geq Y_t\}.$$

Since  $Y'_T = X' \geq X = Y_T$ , thus  $\tau_2 \leq T$  and  $1_A Y'(\tau_2) = 1_A Y(\tau_2)$ . It follows that, for  $\tau \in [\tau_1^\delta, \tau_2]$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} 1_A Y_\tau &= \mathcal{E}[1_A Y_{\tau_2} + \int_\tau^{\tau_2} 1_A f(s, 1_A Y_s) ds | \mathcal{F}_\tau], \\ 1_A Y'_\tau &= \mathcal{E}[1_A Y_{\tau_2} + \int_\tau^{\tau_2} 1_A f(s, 1_A Y'_s) ds | \mathcal{F}_\tau]. \end{aligned}$$

By the uniqueness result of Theorem 4.1, the solutions of the above two equations must coincide with each other. Thus  $Y'_{\tau_1^\delta} 1_A = Y_{\tau_1^\delta} 1_A$ . This contradicts  $P(A) > 0$ .

In order to prove the general case when  $\phi_s \geq 0$ , we define for  $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ ,  $Y^n(\cdot)$  to be the solution of

$$Y_t^n = \mathcal{E} \left[ \left[ X' + \int_t^T \phi_s ds \right] + \int_t^T f(s, Y_s^n) ds | \mathcal{F}_t \right],$$

$$\text{for } t \in [t_i^n, t_{i+1}^n), \quad t_i^n := \frac{iT}{n}, \quad i = 0, 1, \dots, n-1..$$



This equation can be written, piece by piece, as

$$Y_t^n = \mathcal{E} \left[ Y_{t_{i+1}^n}^n + \int_{t_i^n}^{t_{i+1}^n} \phi_s ds + \int_t^{t_{i+1}^n} f(s, Y_s^n) ds | \mathcal{F}_t \right],$$

$$t \in [t_i^n, t_{i+1}^n), Y_T^n = Y_{t_n^n}^n = X'.$$

From the first part of the proof. We have, for  $i = n-1$ ,  $Y_t^n \geq Y_t$ ,  $t \in [t_{n-1}^n, T)$ . In particular,  $Y_{t_{n-1}^n}^n \geq Y_{t_{n-1}^n}$ . An obvious iteration of this algorithm gives

$$Y_t^n \geq Y_t, \quad t \in [t_i^n, t_{i+1}^n), \quad i = 0, \dots, n-2.$$

Thus  $Y_t^n \geq Y_t$ ,  $t \in [0, T]$ .

In order to prove that  $Y_t' \geq Y_t$ , It suffices to show the convergence of the sequence  $(Y^n)$  to  $Y'$ . A computation analogous to the proof of Theorem 4.1 shows that, for fixed  $t \in [t_i^n, t_{i+1}^n)$  and an appropriate constant  $C$ ,

$$E[|Y_t^n - Y_t'|^2] \leq C \mathbf{E} \left[ \left( \int_{\frac{iT}{n}}^t |\phi_s| ds + C_1 \int_t^T |Y_s^n - Y_s'| ds \right)^2 \right]$$

Using Schwartz inequality, one has for all  $t \in [0, T]$

$$\mathbf{E}[|Y_t^n - Y_t'|^2] \leq 2C \frac{T}{n} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |\phi_s|^2 ds + 2CC_1^2 T E \int_t^T |Y_s^n - Y_s'|^2 ds. \quad (93)$$

Gronwall's Lemma applied to the above inequality shows that

$$\mathbf{E}[|Y_t^n - Y_t'|^2] \rightarrow 0,$$

and finally  $Y_t' \geq Y_t$ .

Finally, we investigate possible equality in (92). From  $Y_t' \equiv Y_t$ , one has

$$\mathcal{E}[X + \int_0^T f(s, Y_s) ds] = \mathcal{E}[X' + \int_0^T f(s, Y_s) ds + \int_0^T \Phi_s ds]$$

Since  $X' \geq X$  and  $\int_0^T \Phi_s ds \geq 0$ , it follows from the strict monotonicity of  $\mathcal{E}$  that  $X' = X$  a.s., and  $\int_0^T \Phi_s ds = 0$ , whence  $\Phi = 0$   $dt \times dP$  a.e. and the end of the proof.  $\square$

#### 4.4 Decomposition Theorem for $\mathcal{E}$ -Supermartingales

Our next result generalizes the decomposition theorem for  $g$ -supermartingales proved in Theorem. 3.9 to continuous  $\mathcal{E}$ -supermartingales. The proof is very similar. It also uses mainly arguments from Theorem 3.9.

**Theorem 4.3. (Decomposition theorem for  $\mathcal{E}$ -supermartingales)** Let  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  be an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation satisfying (78) and (81), and let  $Y \in S_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$  be a  $\mathcal{E}$ -supermartingale. Then there exists an  $A(\cdot) \in S_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$  with  $A(0) = 0$  such that  $Y + A$  is an  $\mathcal{E}$ -martingale.

*Proof.* For  $n \geq 1$ , we define  $y^n(\cdot)$ , solution of the following BSDE:

$$y_t^n = \mathcal{E}[Y_T + \int_t^T n(Y_s - y_s^n) ds | \mathcal{F}_t]$$

We have then the following

**Lemma 4.11.** We have, for each  $t$  and  $n \geq 1$ ,

$$Y_t \geq y_t^n, \text{ a.s.}$$

*Proof.* For a  $\delta > 0$  and a given integer  $n > 0$ , we define

$$\sigma^{n,\delta} := \inf\{t; y_t^n \geq Y_t + \delta\} \wedge T.$$

If  $P(\sigma^{n,\delta} < T) = 0$ , for all  $n$  and  $\delta$ , then the proof is done. If it is not the case, then there exist  $\delta > 0$  and a positive integer  $n$  such that  $P(\sigma^{n,\delta} < T) > 0$ . We can then define the following stopping times

$$\tau := \inf\{t \geq \sigma^{n,\delta}; y_t^n \leq Y_t\}$$

It is clear that  $\sigma^{n,\delta} \leq \tau \leq T$ . Because of Theorem 4.1,  $Y_t - y_t^n$  is continuous. Hence we have

$$y_\tau^n \leq Y_\tau \tag{94}$$

But since  $(Y_s - y_s^n) \leq 0$  in  $[\sigma^{n,\delta}, \tau]$ , by monotonicity of  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} y_{\sigma^{n,\delta}}^n &= \mathcal{E}[y_\tau^n + \int_{\sigma^{n,\delta}}^\tau n(Y_s - y_s^n) ds | \mathcal{F}_{\sigma^{n,\delta}}] \\ &\leq \mathcal{E}[y_\tau^n | \mathcal{F}_{\sigma^{n,\delta}}] \\ &\leq \mathcal{E}[Y_\tau | \mathcal{F}_{\sigma^{n,\delta}}] \end{aligned}$$

Finally, since  $Y$  is an  $\mathcal{E}$ -supermartingale, by (optional stopping theorem) Theorem 7.4, we have

$$Y_{\sigma^{n,\delta}} \geq y_{\sigma^{n,\delta}}^n.$$

But on the other hand, we have  $P(\sigma^{n,\delta} < T) > 0$  and, by the definition of  $\sigma^{n,\delta}$ ,  $y_{\sigma^{n,\delta}}^n \geq Y_{\sigma^{n,\delta}} + \delta$  on  $\{\sigma^{n,\delta} < T\}$ . This induces a contradiction. The proof is complete.  $\square$

Lemma 4.11 with Theorem 4.2 above imply that  $y^n(\cdot)$  monotonically converges to some  $Y^0(\cdot) \leq Y(\cdot)$ . Indeed, writing  $\phi_t = Y_t - y_t^{(n+1)} \geq 0$  shows that  $(y^n(\cdot))$  is an increasing sequence of functions.

Observe then that  $y_t^n + \int_0^t n(Y_s - y_s^n)ds$  is an  $\mathcal{E}$ -martingale. By Lemma 4.10, there exists  $(g^n, z^n) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; R \times R^d)$  with

$$|g_s^n| \leq \mu |z_s^n|, \quad n = 1, 2, \dots, \quad (95)$$

such that

$$\begin{aligned} y_t^n + \int_0^t n(Y_s - y_s^n)ds &= y_T^n + \int_0^T n(Y_s - y_s^n)ds \\ &\quad + \int_t^T g_s^n ds - \int_t^T z_s^n dB_s, \end{aligned}$$

hence, as  $y_T^n = Y_T$ ,

$$y_t^n = Y_T + \int_t^T [g_s^n + n(Y_s - y_s^n)]ds - \int_t^T z_s^n dB_s. \quad (96)$$

(87) also tells us that

$$|g_s^n - g_s^m| \leq \mu |z_s^n - z_s^m|, \quad n, m = 1, 2, \dots \quad (97)$$

Let us denote, for each  $n = 1, 2, \dots$ ,

$$A_t^n = n \int_0^t (Y_s - y_s^n)ds$$

$A^n$  is a continuous increasing process such that  $A^n(0) = 0$ .

We are now going to identify the limit of  $y^n(\cdot)$ . To this end, we shall use the following lemma :

**Lemma 4.12.** *There exists a constant  $C$  which is independent of  $n$  such that*

$$(i) \quad \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |z_s^n|^2 ds \leq C; \quad (ii) \quad \mathbf{E}[(A_T^n)^2] \leq C. \quad (98)$$

*Proof.* By  $y_t^1 \leq y_t^n \leq y_t^{n+1} \leq Y_t$ ,  $n = 1, 2, \dots$  with  $E[\sup_{t \in [0, T]} |Y_t|^2] < \infty$ , we have  $|y_t^n| \leq |y_t^1| + |Y_t|$ . Thus there exists a constant  $C$ , independent of  $n$ , such that

$$\mathbf{E} \left[ \sup_{0 \leq t \leq T} |y_t^n|^2 \right] \leq C. \quad (99)$$

We then can apply (28) and (95) to prove (98) step by step as the proof of Lemma 3.7.  $\square$

With the help of Lemma 4.12 we can now end the proof of the Decomposition Theorem.

Note first that (98)–(i) with (95) also implies

$$\mathbf{E} \int_0^T |g_s^n|^2 ds \leq \mu^2 C$$

(98)–(ii) implies that

$$y^n(\cdot) \nearrow Y(\cdot).$$

From by the monotonic limit Theorem 7.2 (in Appendix), it follows that we can write  $Y$  under the form

$$Y_t = Y_T + \int_t^T g_s ds + A_T - A_t - \int_t^T z_s dB_s \quad (100)$$

for some  $(g, z) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; R \times R^d)$  and an increasing process  $A$  with  $A_0 = 0$  and  $\mathbf{E}[A_T^2] < \infty$ . Observe that  $Y(\cdot)$  and then  $A(\cdot)$  is continuous. It follows from Theorem 7.2 that

$$z^n(\cdot) \rightarrow z(\cdot), \quad \text{strongly in } L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; R^d).$$

It follows from (97) that

$$g^n(\cdot) \rightarrow g(\cdot), \quad \text{strongly in } L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T).$$

And finally, (28) gives

$$A_t^n \mapsto A_t, \quad \text{strongly in } L^2(\mathcal{F}_T).$$

Thanks to Lemma 4.6, we can pass to the  $L^2$ -limit in both sides of

$$y_t^n = \mathcal{E}[Y_T + A_T^n - A_t^n | \mathcal{F}_t].$$

It follows that

$$Y_t = \mathcal{E}[Y_T + A_T - A_t | \mathcal{F}_t].$$

Thus  $Y_t + A_t = \mathcal{E}[Y_T + A_T | \mathcal{F}_t]$  is an  $\mathcal{E}$ -martingale (because of (81)). Since  $A$  is increasing, the Theorem is proved.  $\square$

#### 4.5 Representation Theorem of an $\mathcal{F}$ -Expectation by a $g$ -Expectation

In this subsection, we will prove an important result: an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear expectation can be identified as a  $g$ -expectation, provided that (78) and (81) hold.

**Theorem 4.4.** *We assume that an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  satisfies (78) and (81) for some  $\mu > 0$ . Then there exists a function  $g = g(t, z) : \Omega \times [0, T] \times \mathbb{R}^d$  satisfying (i), (ii) and (iii) of (34) such that*

$$\mathcal{E}[X] = \mathcal{E}_g[X], \quad \forall X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T).$$

*In particular, every  $\mathcal{E}$ -martingale is continuous a.s.*

*Moreover, we have  $|g(t, z)| \leq \mu|z|$  for all  $t \in [0, T]$ .*

*Proof.* For each given  $z \in \mathbb{R}^d$ , we consider the following forward equation

$$\begin{cases} dY_t^z = -\mu|z|dt + zdB_t, \\ Y^z(0) = 0. \end{cases}$$

We have  $E[\sup_{t \in [0, T]} |Y_t^z|^2] < \infty$ . It is also clear that  $Y^z$  is an  $\mathcal{E}^\mu$ -martingale, thus an  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$ -supermartingale. Indeed, we can write  $Y_t^z = \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y_T^z | \mathcal{F}_t]$ . From Theorem 4.3, there exists an increasing process  $A^z(\cdot)$  with  $A^z(0) = 0$  and  $E[A_T^z] < \infty$  such that

$$Y_t^z = \mathcal{E}[Y_T^z + A_T^z - A_t^z | \mathcal{F}_t].$$

Or

$$Y_t^z + A_t^z = \mathcal{E}[Y_T^z + A_T^z | \mathcal{F}_t], \quad t \in [0, T].$$

Then, from Lemma 4.10. there exists  $(g(z, \cdot), Z^z(\cdot)) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R}^d)$  with  $|g(z, t)| \leq \mu|Z_t^z|$  such that

$$Y_t^z + A_t^z = Y_T^z + A_T^z + \int_t^T g(z, s)ds - \int_t^T Z_s^z dB_s. \quad (101)$$

We also have

$$|g(z, t) - g(z', t)| \leq \mu|Z_t^z - Z_t^{z'}|. \quad (102)$$

But on the other hand, since

$$Y_t^z = Y_T^z + \int_t^T \mu|z|ds - \int_t^T zdB_s,$$

it follows that

$$\begin{aligned} A_t^z &\equiv \mu|z|t - \int_0^t g(z, s)ds, \\ Z_t^z &\equiv z. \end{aligned}$$

In particular, (102) becomes

$$|g(z, t) - g(z', t)| \leq \mu|z - z'|. \quad (103)$$

Moreover,

$$Y_t^z + A_t^z = Y^z(r) + A^z(r) - \int_r^t g(z, s)ds + \int_r^t z dB_s, \quad 0 \leq r \leq t \leq T,$$

and  $Y_t^z + A_t^z$  is an  $\mathcal{E}$ -martingale. But with the assumption (81) one has, for each  $z \in R^d$  and  $r \leq t$

$$\mathcal{E}\left[-\int_r^t g(z, s)ds + \int_r^t z dB_s | \mathcal{F}_r\right] = \mathcal{E}[Y_t^z + A_t^z - (Y^z(r) + A^z(r)) | \mathcal{F}_r],$$

i.e.

$$\mathcal{E}\left[-\int_r^t g(z, s)ds + \int_r^t z dB_s | \mathcal{F}_r\right] = 0 \quad 0 \leq r \leq t \leq T \quad (104)$$

Now let  $\{A_i\}_{i=1}^N$  be a  $\mathcal{F}_r$ -measurable partition of  $\Omega$  (i.e.,  $A_i$  are disjoint,  $\mathcal{F}_r$ -measurable and  $\cup A_i = \Omega$ ) and let  $z_i \in R^d$ ,  $i = 1, 2, \dots, N$ . From (11), it follows that

$$\begin{aligned} & \mathcal{E}\left[-\int_r^t g\left(\sum_{i=1}^N z_i 1_{A_i}, s\right)ds + \int_r^t \sum_{i=1}^N z_i 1_{A_i} dB_s | \mathcal{F}_r\right] \\ &= \mathcal{E}\left[\sum_{i=1}^N 1_{A_i} \left(-\int_r^t g(z_i, s)ds + \int_r^t z_i dB_s\right) | \mathcal{F}_r\right] \\ &= \sum_{i=1}^N 1_{A_i} \mathcal{E}\left[-\int_r^t g(z_i, s)ds + \int_r^t z_i dB_s | \mathcal{F}_r\right] \\ &= 0 \end{aligned}$$

(because of (104)). In other words, for each simple function  $\eta \in L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_r, P)$ ,

$$\mathcal{E}\left[-\int_r^t g(\eta, s)ds + \int_r^t \eta dB_s | \mathcal{F}_r\right] = 0.$$

From this, the continuity of  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  in  $L^2$  given by (80) and the fact that  $g$  is Lipschitz in  $z$ , it follows that the above equality holds for  $\eta(\cdot) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; R^d)$ :

$$\mathcal{E}\left[-\int_r^t g(\eta_s, s)ds + \int_r^t \eta_s dB_s | \mathcal{F}_r\right] = 0. \quad (105)$$

We just have to prove now that

$$\mathcal{E}_g[X] = \mathcal{E}[X], \quad \forall X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T).$$

To this end we first solve the following BSDE

$$\begin{aligned} -dy_s &= g(s, z_s)ds - z_s dB_s, \\ y_T &= X. \end{aligned}$$

Since  $g$  is Lipschitz in  $z$ , there exists a unique solution  $(y(\cdot), z(\cdot)) \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; R \times R^d)$ . By the definition of  $g$ -expectation,

$$\mathcal{E}_g[X] = y(0).$$

On the other hand, using (105), one finds

$$\begin{aligned}\mathcal{E}[X] &= \mathcal{E}[y(0) - \int_0^T g(z_s, s)ds + \int_0^T z_s dB_s] \\ &= y(0) + \mathcal{E}[-\int_0^T g(z_s, s)ds + \int_0^T z_s dB_s] \\ &= y(0) = \mathcal{E}_g[X].\end{aligned}$$

It follows that this  $g$ -expectation  $\mathcal{E}_g[\cdot]$  coincides with  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  and we are finished.  $\square$

#### 4.6 How to Test and Find $g$ ?

Let  $g(s, z)$  be the generator of the investigated agent. An very important problem is how to find this function  $g$ . We will treat this problem for the case where  $g$  is a deterministic function:  $g(t, z) : [0, \infty) \times \mathbf{R}^d \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$ . We assume that

$$\begin{aligned}|g(t, z) - g(t, z')| &\leq \mu|z - z'|, \quad \forall t \geq 0, \quad \forall z, z' \in \mathbf{R}^d, \\ g(t, 0) &\equiv 0, \quad \forall t \geq 0, .\end{aligned}\tag{106}$$

In this case we can find such  $g$  by the following testing method.

**Proposition 4.1.** *We assume (106). Let  $\bar{z} \in \mathbf{R}^d$  be given, then*

$$\int_t^T g(s, \bar{z})ds = \mathcal{E}_g[\bar{z}B_T | \mathcal{F}_t] - \bar{z}B_t\tag{107}$$

*In particular*

$$\int_0^T g(s, \bar{z})ds = \mathcal{E}_g[\bar{z}B_T]\tag{108}$$

*Proof.* We denote  $Y_t := \mathcal{E}_g[\bar{z}B_T | \mathcal{F}_t]$ , it is the solution of the following BSDE

$$Y_t = \bar{z}B_T + \int_t^T g(s, Z_s)ds - \int_t^T Z_s dB_s$$

Or

$$Y_t - \bar{z}B_t = \int_t^T g(s, Z_s - \bar{z} + \bar{z})ds - \int_t^T (Z_s - \bar{z})dB_s.$$

It follows that  $(\bar{Y}_t, \bar{Z}_t) := (Y_t - \bar{z}B_t, Z_t - \bar{z})$  solves the BSDE

$$\bar{Y}_t = \int_t^T g(s, \bar{Z}_s + \bar{z})ds - \int_t^T \bar{Z}_s dB_s.$$

This BSDE has a unique solution  $(\bar{Y}_t, \bar{Z}_t) \equiv (\int_t^T g(s, \bar{z})ds, 0)$ . We thus have (107).

*Remark 4.2.* It is meaningful to test the generator  $g$  of an agent: at a time  $t \leq T$ , we let the agent evaluate  $\bar{z}B_T$  and result  $\mathcal{E}_g[\bar{z}B_T|\mathcal{F}_t]$ . Then the deterministic data  $\int_t^T g(s, \bar{z})ds$  is obtained by  $\bar{Y}_t = \mathcal{E}_g[\bar{z}B_T|\mathcal{F}_t] - \bar{z}B_t$ , where  $B_t$  is a known value at the time  $t$ .

*Example 4.1.* If  $g$  is time-invariant:  $g = g(z)$ , then we have

$$g(\bar{z})(T - t) = \mathcal{E}_g[\bar{z}B_T|\mathcal{F}_t] - \bar{z}B_t$$

and

$$g(\bar{z})T = \mathcal{E}_g[\bar{z}B_T], \quad \bar{z} \in \mathbf{R}^d.$$

*Example 4.2.* If we already know that  $g = g_0(\theta, z)$ , where  $g_0 : [a, b] \times \mathbf{R}^d \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$  is a given function but we have to find the parameter  $\theta \in [a, b]$ , assume that for some  $\bar{z} \in \mathbf{R}^d$ ,  $g_0(\theta, z)$  is a strictly increasing function of  $\theta$  in  $[a, b]$ . Then we can only test the agent once at the time, say  $t = 0$ . Using the formula

$$g_0(\theta, \bar{z})T = \mathcal{E}_g[\bar{z}B_T],$$

we can uniquely determine  $\theta$ .

#### 4.7 A General Situation: $\mathcal{F}_t$ -Evaluation Representation Theorem

Theorem 4.4 is only valid for a part of  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear expectations. For a general situation we have the following result [Peng2003b]. By the limitation of the size of this lecture, we will only state the result without given the proof. We are given an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear evaluation defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  :

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot] : L^2(\mathcal{F}_t) \rightarrow L^2(\mathcal{F}_s), \quad 0 \leq s \leq t \leq T.$$

It satisfies the axiomatic assumptions (A1)–(A4), with the following additional  $\mathcal{E}^{g_{\mu,\mu}}$ -dominated assumption ( $g_{\mu,\mu}(y, z) := \mu(|y| + |z|)$ ), weaker than (A5):

**(A5')** There a sufficiently large number  $\mu > 0$  such that, for each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$ ,

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X] - \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X'] \leq \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^{g_{\mu,\mu}}[X - X'], \quad \forall X, X' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t).$$

The  $g$ -evaluation representation theorem is as follows:

**Theorem 4.5.** *Let  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot] : L^2(\mathcal{F}_t) \rightarrow L^2(\mathcal{F}_s)$ ,  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$ , satisfy (A1)–(A4) and (A5'). Then there exists a function  $g(\omega, t, y, z)$  satisfying (34)–(i), (ii) and (iii), such that, for each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$ ,*

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X] = \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[X], \quad \forall X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t).$$

*Remark 4.3.* In this result we do not need the assumption (81). Thus  $g$  may depend on  $(y, z)$ .



*Remark 4.4.* In [Peng2003b] we also consider the situation where (A4) is weakened by (A4'):  $1_A \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X] = 1_A \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[1_A X]$ , for each  $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$ . In this case the corresponding  $g$  satisfies only (34)–(i) and (ii) without the condition  $g(s, 0, 0) \equiv 0$ .

*Remark 4.5.* From the above  $g$ -evaluation representation theorems, we see that the dominating term, such as  $\mathcal{E}^{g\mu, \mu}[\cdot]$ , plays an important role. A general formulation is:

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X] - \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X'] \leq \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^*[X - X'],$$

where  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^*[X - X']$  is a given self-dominated nonlinear evaluation: i.e., it is a concrete evaluation satisfying (A1)–(A4) and

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}^*[X] - \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^*[X'] \leq \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^*[X - X'], \quad \forall X, X' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t).$$

## 5 Dynamic Risk Measures

Recently Rosazza Gianin [Roazza2003] considered a type of dynamic risk measures induced from  $g$ -expectations. We consider a more general situation. Let  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot]$  be an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear evaluation defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ . It satisfies (A1)–(A4). We set, for each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$ , and  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ ,  $\rho_{s,t}[X] := \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[-X]$ .  $\{\rho_{s,t}[\cdot]\}_{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T}$  is called a dynamic risk measure defined on  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ . We consider an  $\mathcal{F}$ -consistent evaluation  $\{\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot]\}_{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T}$  satisfying some of the following axiomatic conditions: for each  $0 \leq s \leq t \leq T$  and  $X, Y \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_t)$ , it satisfies

- (e1) subadditivity:  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X + Y] \leq \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X] + \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y]$ ;
- (e2) positively homogeneity:  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\alpha X] = \alpha \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X]$ ;
- (e3) constant translability:  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X + \eta] = \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X] + \eta$ ,  $\forall \eta \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_s)$
- (e4) convexity:

$$\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\alpha X + (1 - \alpha)Y] \leq \alpha \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[X] + (1 - \alpha) \mathcal{E}_{s,t}[Y], \quad \forall \alpha \in [0, 1].$$

Similar to [ADEH1999] and [FoSc2002] for static situations, we can define the following type of dynamic risk measures.

**Definition 5.1.** A dynamic risk measure  $\{\rho_{s,t}[\cdot]\}_{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T}$  is said to be coherent if the corresponding nonlinear evaluation  $\{\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot]\}_{0 \leq s \leq t \leq T}$  satisfies (e1)–(e3). It is said to be convex and constant translatable if  $\mathcal{E}_{s,t}[\cdot]$  satisfies (e3) and (e4).

For the situation of  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -evaluation, we have the corresponding  $\rho^g$ -risk measure defined by  $\rho_{s,t}^g[X] := \mathcal{E}_{s,t}^g[-X]$ . A very interesting point is that the concrete function  $g$  perfectly reflexes the attitude of an investor towards risks. In fact we have the following properties:

**Proposition 5.1.** *We assume that  $g$  satisfies (34)–(i), (ii). Then  $\mathcal{E}^g[\cdot]$  is subadditive (resp. superadditive) if  $g$  is subadditive (resp. superadditive) in  $(y, z) \in R^{1+d}$ . It is positively homogeneous if  $g$  is positively homogeneous in  $(y, z) \in R^{1+d}$ . It is convex (resp. concave) if  $g$  is convex (resp. concave) in  $(y, z) \in R^{1+d}$ . It has constant translability if  $g$  is independent of  $y$ . Moreover, if, for each  $(y, z)$  and  $P$ -a.s.,  $g(\cdot, y, z) \in D_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$ , then all the above “if” can be replaced by “if and only if”.*

For the proof of this proposition we refer to [EPQ1997], [BCHMP2000], [Roazza2003] and [Peng2003c].

## 6 Numerical Solution of BSDEs: Euler’s Approximation

Let  $(\epsilon_i^n)_{i=1,2,\dots,n}$  be a Bernoulli sequence, i.e., an i.i.d. sequence such that with

$$P\{\epsilon_i^n = 1\} = P\{\epsilon_i^n = -1\} = \frac{1}{2}.$$

We set

$$B_k^n := \sqrt{n} \sum_{i=1}^k \epsilon_i^n, \quad \mathcal{F}_k^n := \sigma\{B_k^n; 1 \leq k \leq n\}$$

$$\Delta B_{k+1}^n := B_{k+1}^n - B_k^n = \sqrt{n} \epsilon_{k+1}^n,$$

Let  $\xi$  be  $\mathcal{F}_k^n$ -measurable. This implies that there exists a function:  $\Phi : \{1, -1\}^k \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$ , such that

$$\xi^n = \Phi_n(\epsilon_1^n, \dots, \epsilon_k^n).$$

All processes are assumed to be  $\mathcal{F}_k^n$ -adapted. We make the following assumption

(H1)  $B^n$  converges to  $B$  in  $\mathcal{S}^2$

(H2)  $\xi^n$  converges to  $\xi$  in  $L^2(P)$ .

$f$  and  $f^n : [0, 1] \times \Omega \times \mathbf{R} \times \mathbf{R} \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$  such that for each  $(y, z) \in \mathbf{R} \times \mathbf{R}$ ,  $\{f^n(t, y, z)\}_{0 \leq t \leq 1}$  (resp.  $\{f(t, y, z)\}_{0 \leq t \leq 1}$ ) are progressively measurable with respect to  $\mathcal{F}_t^n$  (resp. to  $\mathcal{F}_t$ ) such that

(H3)–(i):

$$|f^n(t, y, z) - f^n(t, y', z')| \leq C(|y - y'| + |z - z'|)$$

$$|f(t, y, z) - f(t, y', z')| \leq C(|y - y'| + |z - z'|)$$

(ii) For each  $(y, z)$  paths  $\{f^n(t, y, z)\}_{0 \leq t \leq 1}$  have RCLL paths and converges to  $\{f(t, y, z)\}_{0 \leq t \leq 1}$  in  $\mathcal{S}^2(R)$  with

$$|Y|_{\mathcal{S}^2} := \{E[\sup_{0 \leq t \leq 1} |Y_t|^2]\}^{1/2}.$$

We set

$$f^n(t, y, z) \equiv g_k^n(y, z), \quad t \in \left[\frac{k}{n}, \frac{k+1}{n}\right), \quad k = 0, 1, \dots, n.$$

and

$y^n = \xi^n$ : a given  $\mathcal{F}_n^n$ -measurable random variable. Then we solve backwardsly

$$y_k^n = y_{k+1}^n + g_k^n(y_k^n, z_k^n) \frac{1}{n} - z_k^n \Delta B_{k+1}^n, \quad k = n-1, \dots, 3, 2, 1.$$

Or  $y_t^n \equiv y_k^n$ ,  $z_t^n \equiv z_k^n$ ,  $t \in [\frac{k}{n}, \frac{k+1}{n})$ . We call  $(y^n, z^n)$  the solution to  $(g, \xi)$ .

$$\begin{aligned} dy_t^n &= f^n(t, y_t^n, z_t^n) d\langle B^n \rangle_t - z_t^n dB_t^n, \\ y_T^n &= \xi^n. \end{aligned}$$

**Theorem 6.1. (Existence and Uniqueness and Comparison)** *Let*

$$g_k^n(\omega, y, z) : \Omega \times \mathbf{R} \times \mathbf{R} \rightarrow \mathbf{R}, \quad k = 1, \dots, n-1$$

*be  $\mathcal{F}_k^n$ -measurable and  $C$ -Lipschitz with respect to  $y$  with  $n > C$ . Then there exists a unique  $\mathcal{F}_k^n$ -adapted pair  $(y^n, z^n)$ , solution to  $(g, \xi)$ . Moreover, if  $(y^{n'}, z^{n'})$  is the solution corresponding to  $(g', \xi')$ , and if*

$$g_k^{n'}(\omega, y, z) \geq g_k^n(\omega, y, z), \quad \xi^{n'} \geq \xi^n,$$

*then the corresponding solution  $(y^{n'}, z^{n'})$  satisfies*

$$y_k^{n'} \geq y_k^n.$$

**Corollary.** If  $A_1(\cdot)$  and  $A_2(\cdot)$  satisfies the above conditions with  $A_1(y) \geq A_2(y)$ , for all  $y \in R$ . Then  $A_1^{-1}(x) \leq A_2^{-1}(x)$ , for all  $x \in R$ .

**Proof of the theorem.** Assume that  $y_{k+1}^n$  are solved, we then solve  $(y_k^n, z_k^n)$ .

$$y_k^n = y_{k+1}^n + g_k^n(y_k^n, z_k^n) \frac{1}{n} - z_k^n \Delta B_{k+1}^n \quad (109)$$

Since  $y_{k+1}^n$  has the form:  $y_{k+1}^n = \Phi_{k+1}(\epsilon_1, \dots, \epsilon_{k+1})$ . We set

$$\begin{aligned} y_{k+1}^{(+)} &:= \Phi_{k+1}(\epsilon_1, \dots, 1), \\ y_{k+1}^{(-)} &:= \Phi_{k+1}(\epsilon_1, \dots, -1). \end{aligned}$$

$y_{k+1}^+$  and  $y_{k+1}^-$  are  $\mathcal{F}_k^n$ -measurable. We set  $\epsilon_{k+1} = \pm 1$ , in (109):

$$\begin{aligned} y_k^n &= y_{k+1}^+ + g_k^n(y_k^n, z_k^n) \frac{1}{n} - z_k^n n^{-1/2} \\ y_k^n &= y_{k+1}^- + g_k^n(y_k^n, z_k^n) \frac{1}{n} + z_k^n n^{-1/2} \end{aligned}$$

$z_k^n$  can be uniquely solved by  $z_k^n = \frac{y_{k+1}^{(+)} - y_{k+1}^{(-)}}{2}$ . The equation for  $y_k^n$  is

$$y_k^n - g_k^n(y_k^n, z_k^n) \frac{1}{n} = \frac{y_{k+1}^{(+)} + y_{k+1}^{(-)}}{2} \quad (110)$$

When  $n > C$ , the mapping  $A(y) := y - g_k^n(y, z_k^n) \frac{1}{n}$  is strictly monotonic function of  $y$  with  $A(y) \rightarrow +\infty$  (resp.  $-\infty$ ) as  $y \rightarrow +\infty$  (resp.  $-\infty$ ). Thus the solution  $y_k^n$  of (3) exists and is unique. By the Corollary, the comparison theorem also holds.  $\square$

We consider

$$(a) \quad y_t = \xi + \int_t^1 f(s, y_s, z_s) ds - \int_t^1 z_s dB_s$$

$$(b)_n \quad y_t^n = \xi^n + \int_t^1 f_n(s, y_s^n, z_s^n) d\langle B^n \rangle_t - \int_t^1 z_s^n dB_s^n$$

**Theorem 6.2.** (Briand, Delyon & Memin, 2001) We assume (H1), (H2) and (H3). Let  $(y^n, z^n)$  be the solution of  $(b)_n$  and  $(y, z)$  be the solution of (a). Then, in  $\mathcal{S}^2 \times \mathcal{S}^2$ ,

$$\left( y^n, \int_0^\cdot z_s^n dB_s^n \right) \rightarrow \left( y, \int_0^\cdot z_s dB_s \right), \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty$$

and in  $\mathcal{S}^2 \times \mathcal{S}^2$

$$\left( \int_0^\cdot z_s^n d\langle B^n \rangle_s, \int_0^\cdot |z_s^n|^2 d\langle B^n \rangle_s \right) \rightarrow \left( \int_0^\cdot z_s d\langle B^n \rangle_s, \int_0^\cdot |z_s^n|^2 d\langle B^n \rangle_s \right) \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty.$$

## 7 Appendix

### 7.1 Martingale Representation Theorem

The existence theorem of BSDE requires the following result: any element  $\xi \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  can be represent by

$$\xi = \mathbf{E}[\xi] + \int_0^T \phi_s dB_s.$$

For notational simplification, we assume that  $B$  is 1-dimensional, i.e.,  $d = 1$ . We need the following lemma.

**Lemma 7.1.** Let  $\eta \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  be given such that

$$\mathbf{E}[\eta(1 + \int_0^T \phi_s dB_s)] = 0, \quad \forall \phi \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T).$$

Then  $\eta = 0$ , a.s..

*Proof.* For each deterministic  $\mu(\cdot) \in L^\infty(0, T; \mathbb{C})$ , we denote by  $X^\mu$ , the solution of the following SDE

$$dX_t^\mu = \mu(t)X_t^\mu dB_t, \quad X_0^\mu = 1.$$

It suffices to prove that if, for each  $\mu(\cdot) \in L^\infty(0, T; \mathbb{C})$  we have  $\mathbf{E}[\eta X_T^\mu] = 0$ , then  $\eta = 0$ , a.s.

For each  $N \in \mathbb{Z}$ ,  $x = (x_1, \dots, x_N) \in \mathbf{R}^N$  and  $0 \leq t_1 < \dots < t_N \leq T$ , we set  $\mu(t) = i \sum_{j=1}^N x_j 1_{[0, t_j]}(t)$ . It is easy to check that

$$\begin{aligned} X_t^\mu &= \exp\{i \int_0^t \mu(s) dB_s - \frac{1}{2} \int_0^t |\mu(s)|^2 ds\} \\ &= e^{i \sum_{j=1}^N x_j B_{t_j \wedge t}} \exp\{-\frac{1}{2} \int_0^t |\mu(s)|^2 ds\} \end{aligned}$$

Thus the condition  $\mathbf{E}[\eta X_T^\mu] = 0$  implies

$$\Phi_\mu(x) := \mathbf{E}[\eta e^{i \sum_{j=1}^N x_j B_{t_j}}] = 0.$$

Now for an arbitrary  $g \in C_0^\infty(\mathbf{R}^N)$ , let  $\hat{g}$  be its Fourier transform. We then have

$$\begin{aligned} &\mathbf{E}[g(B_{t_1}, \dots, B_{t_N})\eta] \\ &= \mathbf{E}[(2\pi)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \int_{\mathbf{R}^N} \hat{g}(x_1, \dots, x_N) e^{i \sum_{j=1}^N x_j B_{t_j}} dx \eta] \\ &= (2\pi)^{-\frac{N}{2}} \int_{\mathbf{R}^N} \hat{g}(x) \Phi_\mu(x) dx = 0. \end{aligned}$$

Since the subset

$$\{g(B(t_1), \dots, B(t_N)); 0 \leq t_1, \dots, t_N \leq T, g \in C_0^\infty(\mathbf{R}^N), N \in \mathbb{Z}\}$$

is dense in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , it follows that  $\eta = 0$ .

We now can prove the representation theorem.

**Theorem 7.1.** (*Representation theorem of an element of  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  by Itô's integral*) For each  $\xi \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  there exists a unique  $z \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$  such that

$$\xi = \mathbf{E}[\xi] + \int_0^T z_s dB_s, \quad a.s. \quad (111)$$

*Proof.* Let  $\xi \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  be given. We define the following functional

$$f(\phi) := \mathbf{E}[\xi \int_0^T \phi_s dB_s], \quad \phi \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d).$$

By Schwards inequality  $|f(\phi)| \leq \mathbf{E}[|\xi|^2]^{1/2} \cdot \mathbf{E}[\int_0^T |\phi_s|^2 ds]^{1/2}$ . Thus  $f$  is a bounded linear functional defined on  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ . It follows from the well-known

Riesz representation theorem (see for example [Yosida1980] p90) that, there exists a unique process  $z \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ , such that

$$f(\phi) = \mathbf{E}[\int_0^T \phi_s z_s ds], \quad \forall \phi \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T),$$

or

$$\mathbf{E}[\int_0^T \phi_s dB_s (\xi - \int_0^T z_s dB_s)] = 0, \quad \forall \phi \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T).$$

Thus we have

$$\mathbf{E}[(1 + \int_0^T \phi_s dB_s)(\xi - \mathbf{E}[\xi] - \int_0^T z_s dB_s)] = 0, \quad \forall \phi \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T).$$

But by Lemma 7.1, this implies (111).  $\square$

## 7.2 A Monotonic Limit Theorem of Itô's Processes

We present a convergence result of a sequence of Itô processes, called “monotonic limit theorem”. In this lecture we use this result to prove nonlinear supermartingale decomposition theorems. We consider the following sequence of Itô processes:

$$y_t^i = y_0^i + \int_0^t g_s^i ds - A_t^i + \int_0^t z_s^i dB_s, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots \quad (112)$$

for each  $i$ , the adapted process  $g^i \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$  are given, we also assume that, for each  $i$ ,

$$A^i \in S^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T) \text{ is increasing with } A_0^i = 0, \quad (113)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} & \text{(i) } (g_t^i) \text{ and } (z_t^i) \text{ are bounded in } L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T): \mathbf{E} \int_0^T [|g_s^i|^2 + |z_s^i|^2] ds \leq C; \\ & \text{(ii) } (y_t^i) \text{ increasingly converges to } (y_t) \text{ with } \mathbf{E}[\sup_{0 \leq t \leq T} |y_t|^2] < \infty, \end{aligned} \quad (114)$$

where the constant  $C$  is independent of  $i$ . It is clear that

$$\begin{aligned} & \text{(i) } \mathbf{E}[\sup_{0 \leq t \leq T} |y_t^i|^2] \leq C; \\ & \text{(ii) } \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |y_t^i - y_t|^2 dt \rightarrow 0, \end{aligned} \quad (115)$$

where the constant  $C$  is independent of  $i$ .

*Remark 7.1.* It is not hard to check that the limit  $y$  has the following form

$$y_t = y_0 + \int_0^t g_s^0 ds - A_t + \int_0^t z_s dB_s, \quad (116)$$

where  $g^0$  and  $z$  are respectively the weak limit of  $\{g^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  and  $\{z^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  in  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$ ,  $(A_t)_{t \in [0, T]}$  is an increasing process. In general, we can not prove the strong convergence of  $\left\{ \int_0^T z_s^i dB_s \right\}_{i=1}^\infty$ . Our new observation is: for each  $p \in [1, 2)$ ,  $\{z^i\}$  converges strongly in  $L^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$ . This observation is crucially important, since we will treat nonlinear cases.

The limit theorem is as follows.

**Theorem 7.2.** *We assume (113) and (114). Then the limit  $y_t$  of  $\{y^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  has a form (116), where  $g^0 \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$  and  $z \in L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$  are respectively the weak limit of  $\{g^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  and  $\{z^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  in  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$  and  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$ . For each  $t \in [0, T]$ ,  $A_t$  is a weak limit of  $\{A_t^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ .  $(A_t)_{t \in [0, T]}$  is an RCLL square-integrable increasing process. Furthermore, for any  $p \in [0, 2)$ ,  $\{z^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  strongly converges to  $z$  in  $L^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T, \mathbf{R}^d)$ , i.e.,*

$$\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |z_s^i - z_s|^p ds = 0, \quad p \in [0, 2). \quad (117)$$

If moreover  $(y)_{t \in [0, T]}$  is continuous, then we have

$$\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |z_s^i - z_s|^2 ds = 0. \quad (118)$$

*Remark 7.2.* An interesting open problem is: does (118) hold without the additional continuous assumption for  $y$ ?

In order to prove this theorem, we need the several Lemmas. The following lemma will be applied to prove that the limit processes  $y$  is RCLL.

**Lemma 7.2.** *Let  $\{x^i(\cdot)\}_{i=1}^\infty$  be a sequence of (deterministic) RCLL processes defined on  $[0, T]$  that increasingly converges to  $x(\cdot)$  such that, for each  $t \in [0, T]$ , and  $i = 1, 2, \dots$ ,  $x^i(t) \leq x^{i+1}(t)$ , with  $x(t) = b(t) - a(t)$ , where  $b(\cdot)$  is an RCLL process and  $a(\cdot)$  is an increasing process with  $a(0) = 0$  and  $a(T) < \infty$ . Then  $x(\cdot)$  and  $a(\cdot)$  are also RCLL processes.*

*Proof.* Since  $b(\cdot)$ ,  $a(\cdot)$  and thus  $x(\cdot)$  have left and right limits, thus we only need to check that  $x(\cdot)$  is right continuous. For each  $t \in [0, T)$ , since  $a(t+) \geq a(t)$ , thus

$$x(t+) = b(t) - a(t+) \leq x(t). \quad (119)$$

On the other hand, for any  $\delta > 0$ , there exists a positive integer  $j = j(\delta, t)$  such that  $x(t) \leq x^j(t) + \delta$ . Since  $x^j(\cdot)$  is RCLL, thus there exists a positive number  $\epsilon_0 = \epsilon_0(j, t, \delta)$  such that  $x^j(t) \leq x^j(t + \epsilon) + \delta$ ,  $\forall \epsilon \in (0, \epsilon_0]$ . These imply that, for any  $\epsilon \in (0, \epsilon_0]$ ,

$$x(t) \leq x^j(t + \epsilon) + \delta \leq x^{i+j}(t + \epsilon) + 2\delta \uparrow x(t + \epsilon) + 2\delta.$$

Particularly, we have  $x(t) \leq x(t+) + 2\delta$  and thus  $x(t) \leq x(t+)$ . This with (119) implies the right continuity of  $x(\cdot)$ .  $\square$

We need some estimates for the jumps of  $A$ . We first have

**Lemma 7.3.** *Let  $A$  be an increasing RCLL process defined on  $[0, T]$  with  $A_0 = 0$  and  $\mathbf{E}(A_T)^2 < \infty$ . Then, for any  $\epsilon > 0$ , there exists a finite number of stopping times  $\sigma_k$ ,  $k = 0, 1, 2, \dots, N+1$  with  $\sigma_0 = 0 < \sigma_1 \leq \dots \leq \sigma_N \leq T = \sigma_{N+1}$  and with disjoint graphs on  $(0, T)$  such that*

$$\sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} \sum_{t \in (\sigma_k, \sigma_{k+1})} (\Delta A_t)^2 \leq \epsilon. \quad (120)$$

*Proof.* For each  $\nu > 0$ , we denote

$$A_t(\nu) := A_t - \sum_{s \leq t} \Delta A_s 1_{\{\Delta A_s > \nu\}}.$$

$A(\nu)$  has jumps of  $A$  smaller than  $\nu$ . Thus there is a sufficiently small  $\nu > 0$  such that

$$\mathbf{E} \left[ \sum_{s \leq T} (\Delta A_s(\nu))^2 \right] \leq \frac{\epsilon}{2}.$$

Now let  $\tau_k$ ,  $k = 1, 2, \dots$  be the successive times of jumps of  $A$  with size bigger than  $\nu$ ; they are stopping times, and there is  $N$  such that

$$\mathbf{E} \left( \sum_{s \in (\tau_N, T)} (\Delta A_s)^2 \right) \leq \frac{\epsilon}{2}.$$

We then set  $\sigma_k := \tau_k \wedge T$  for  $k \leq N$ , and  $\sigma_{N+1} = T$ . It is clear that  $\{\sigma_k\}_{k=0}^{N+1}$  satisfies (120).  $\square$

For applying the formula of the integral by part to the limit process  $y$  (with jumps), the above open intervals  $(\sigma_k, \sigma_{k+1})$  is not so convenient. Thus we will cut a sufficiently small interval  $(\sigma_k, \tau_k)$  and only work on the remaining subintervals  $(\sigma_k, \tau_k]$ . This is possible since our filtration is continuous. In fact we have:

**Lemma 7.4.** *Let  $0 < \sigma \leq T$  be a stopping time. Then there exists a sequence of  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -stopping times  $\{\tau^i\}$  with  $0 < \tau^i < \sigma$ , a.s. for each  $i = 1, 2, \dots$ , such that  $\tau^i \uparrow \sigma$ .*

For the continuous filtration  $\mathcal{F}_t$ , this lemma is quite classical. The proof is omitted.

The following lemma tells that, for any given RCLL increasing process, the contribution of the jumps of  $A$  is mainly concentrated within a finite number of left-open right-closed intervals with “sufficiently small total length”. Specifically, we have

**Lemma 7.5.** *Let  $A$  be an increasing RCLL process defined on  $[0, T]$  with  $A_0 = 0$  and  $\mathbf{E}A_T^2 < \infty$ . Then, for any  $\delta, \epsilon > 0$ , there exists a finite number of pairs of stopping times  $\{\sigma_k, \tau_k\}$ ,  $k = 0, 1, 2, \dots, N$  with  $0 < \sigma_k \leq \tau_k \leq T$ , such that*



- (i)  $(\sigma_j, \tau_j] \cap (\sigma_k, \tau_k] = \emptyset$  for each  $j \neq k$ ;
- (ii)  $\mathbf{E} \sum_{k=0}^N (\tau_k - \sigma_k) \geq T - \epsilon$
- (iii)  $\sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} \sum_{\sigma_k < t \leq \tau_k} (\Delta A_t)^2 \leq \delta$

*Proof.* We first apply Lemma 7.3 to construct a sequence of non-decreasing stopping times  $\{\sigma_k\}_{k=0}^{N+1}$  with  $\sigma_0 = 0$  and  $\sigma_{N+1} = T$  such that,  $\sigma_k < \sigma_{k+1}$  whenever  $\sigma_k < T$  and that

$$\sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} \sum_{t \in (\sigma_k, \sigma_{k+1})} (\Delta A_t)^2 \leq \delta.$$

Then for each  $0 \leq k \leq N$ , we apply Lemma 7.4 to construct a stopping time  $0 < \tau'_k < \sigma_{k+1}$ , such that

$$\mathbf{E} \sum_{k=0}^N (\sigma_{k+1} - \tau'_k) \leq \epsilon.$$

Finally we set

$$\tau_0 = \tau'_0, \tau_1 = \sigma_1 \vee \tau'_1, \dots, \tau_N = \sigma_N \vee \tau'_N.$$

It is clear that  $\tau_k \in [\sigma_k, \sigma_{k+1}) \cap [\tau'_{k+1}, \sigma_{k+1}]$ . We have also  $\tau_k < \sigma_{k+1}$  whenever  $\sigma_k < T$ . Thus  $(\sigma_k, \tau_k] \in (\sigma_k, \sigma_{k+1})$ . It follows that

$$\mathbf{E} \sum_{k=0}^N (\sigma_{k+1} - \tau_k) \leq \epsilon,$$

or

$$\mathbf{E} \sum_{k=0}^N (\tau_k - \sigma_k) \geq T - \epsilon,$$

and

$$\sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} \sum_{t \in (\sigma_k, \tau_k]} (\Delta A_t)^2 \leq \sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} \sum_{t \in (\sigma_k, \sigma_{k+1})} (\Delta A_t)^2 \leq \delta.$$

Thus the above conditions (i)-(iii) are satisfied.  $\square$

We now give the

**Proof of Theorem 7.2.** Since  $(g^i)$  (resp.  $(z^i)$ ) is weakly compact in  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T)$  (resp.  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$ ), there is a subsequence, still denoted by  $(g^i)$  (resp.  $(z^i)$ ) which converges weakly to  $(g_t^0)$  (resp.  $(z_t)$ ).

Thus, for each stopping time  $\tau \leq T$ , the following weak convergence holds in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_\tau)$ .

$$\int_0^\tau z_s^i dB_s \rightharpoonup \int_0^\tau z_s dB_s, \quad \int_0^\tau g_s^i ds \rightharpoonup \int_0^\tau g_s^0 ds.$$

Since

$$A_\tau^i = -y_\tau^i + y_0^i + \int_0^\tau g_s^i ds + \int_0^\tau z_s^i dB_s$$

thus we also have the weak convergence

$$A_\tau^i \rightharpoonup A_\tau := -y_\tau + y_0 + \int_0^\tau g_s^0 ds + \int_0^\tau z_s dB_s.$$

Obviously,  $\mathbf{E}[A_\tau^2] < \infty$ . For any two stopping times  $\sigma \leq \tau \leq T$ , we have  $A_\sigma \leq A_\tau$  since  $A_\sigma^i \leq A_\tau^i$ . From this it follows that  $A$  is an increasing process. Moreover, from Lemma 7.2, both  $A$  and  $y$  are RCLL. Thus  $y$  has a form of (116). Since  $y$  is given, it is clear that  $z$  is uniquely determined. Thus not only the subsequence of  $\{z^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  but also the sequence itself converges weakly to  $z$ . Our key point is to show that  $\{z^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  converges to  $z$  in the strong sense of (117). In order to prove this we use Itô's formula applied to  $(y_t^i - y_t)^2$  on a given subinterval  $(\sigma, \tau]$ . Here  $0 \leq \sigma \leq \tau \leq T$  are two stopping times. Observe that  $\Delta y_t \equiv \Delta A_t$  and the fact that  $y^i$  and then  $A^i$  are continuous. We have

$$\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{E}|y_\sigma^i - y_\sigma|^2 + \mathbf{E} \int_\sigma^\tau |z_s^i - z_s|^2 ds \\ &= \mathbf{E}|y_\tau^i - y_\tau|^2 - \mathbf{E} \sum_{t \in (\sigma, \tau]} (\Delta A_t)^2 - 2\mathbf{E} \int_\sigma^\tau (y_s^i - y_s)(g_s^i - g_s^0) ds \\ & \quad + 2\mathbf{E} \int_{(\sigma, \tau]} (y_s^i - y_s) dA_s^i - 2\mathbf{E} \int_{(\sigma, \tau]} (y_s^i - y_{s-}) dA_s \\ &= \mathbf{E}|y_\tau^i - y_\tau|^2 + \mathbf{E} \sum_{t \in (\sigma, \tau]} (\Delta A_t)^2 - 2\mathbf{E} \int_\sigma^\tau (y_s^i - y_s)(g_s^i - g_s^0) ds \\ & \quad + 2\mathbf{E} \int_{(\sigma, \tau]} (y_s^i - y_s) dA_s^i - 2\mathbf{E} \int_{(\sigma, \tau]} (y_s^i - y_{s-}) dA_s \end{aligned}$$

Since  $\int_{(\sigma, \tau]} (y_s^i - y_s) dA_s^i \leq 0$ , we then have

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{E} \int_\sigma^\tau |z_s^i - z_s|^2 ds &\leq \mathbf{E}|y_\tau^i - y_\tau|^2 + \mathbf{E} \sum_{t \in (\sigma, \tau]} (\Delta A_t)^2 \\ &\quad + 2\mathbf{E} \int_\sigma^\tau |y_s^i - y_s| |g_s^i - g_s^0| ds + 2\mathbf{E} \int_{(\sigma, \tau]} |y_s^i - y_s| dA_s. \end{aligned} \quad (121)$$

The third term on the right side tends to zero since

$$\mathbf{E} \int_0^T |y_s^i - y_s| |g_s^i - g_s^0| ds \leq C \left[ \mathbf{E} \int_0^T |y_s^i - y_s|^2 ds \right]^{\frac{1}{2}} \rightarrow 0. \quad (122)$$

For the last term, we have,  $P$ -almost surely,

$$|y_s^1 - y_s| \geq |y_s^i - y_s| \rightarrow 0, \quad \forall s \in [0, T].$$

Since

$$\mathbf{E} \int_0^T |y_s^1 - y_s| dA_s \leq (\mathbf{E}[\sup_s (|y_s^1 - y_s|^2)]^{\frac{1}{2}} (\mathbf{E}(A_T)^2)^{\frac{1}{2}} < \infty.$$

It then follows from Lebesgue's dominated convergence theorem that

$$\mathbf{E} \int_{(0, T]} |y_s^i - y_s| dA_s \rightarrow 0. \quad (123)$$

By convergence of (122) and (123), it is clear from the estimate (121) that, once  $A$  is continuous (thus  $\Delta A_t \equiv 0$ ) on  $[0, T]$ , then  $z^i$  tends to  $z$  strongly in  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$ . Thus the second assertion of the theorem, i.e., (118) follows.

But for the general case, the situation becomes complicated. Thanks to Lemma 7.5, for any positive  $\delta$  and  $\epsilon$ , there exist a finite number of disjoint intervals  $(\sigma_k, \tau_k]$ ,  $k = 0, 1, \dots, N$ , such that  $\sigma_k \leq \tau_k \leq T$  are all stopping times satisfying

$$\begin{aligned} \text{(i)} \quad & \mathbf{E} \sum_{k=0}^N [\tau_k - \sigma_k](\omega) \geq T - \frac{\epsilon}{2}; \\ \text{(ii)} \quad & \sum_{k=0}^N \sum_{\sigma_k < t \leq \tau_k} \mathbf{E}(\Delta A_t)^2 \leq \frac{\delta \epsilon}{3}. \end{aligned} \quad (124)$$

Now, for each  $\sigma = \sigma_k$  and  $\tau = \tau_k$ , we apply estimate (121) and then take the sum. It follows that

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} \int_{\sigma_k}^{\tau_k} |z_s^i - z_s|^2 ds &\leq \sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} |y_{\tau_k}^i - y_{\tau_k}|^2 + \sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} \sum_{t \in (\sigma_k, \tau_k]} (\Delta A_t)^2 \\ &\quad + 2\mathbf{E} \int_0^T |y_s^i - y_s| |g_s^i - g_s^0| ds + 2\mathbf{E} \int_{(0, T]} |y_s^i - y_s| dA_s. \end{aligned}$$

By using the convergence results (122) and (123) and taking in consideration of (124)-(ii), it follows that

$$\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} \int_{\sigma_k}^{\tau_k} |z_s^i - z_s|^2 ds \leq \sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} \sum_{t \in (\sigma_k, \tau_k]} (\Delta A_t)^2 \leq \frac{\epsilon \delta}{3}$$

Thus there exists an integer  $l_{\epsilon \delta} > 0$  such that, whenever  $i \geq l_{\epsilon \delta}$ , we have

$$\sum_{k=0}^N \mathbf{E} \int_{\sigma_k}^{\tau_k} |z_s^i - z_s|^2 ds \leq \frac{\epsilon \delta}{2}$$

Thus, in the product space  $([0, T] \times \Omega, \mathcal{B}([0, T]) \times \mathcal{F}, m \times P)$  (here  $m$  stands for the Lebesgue measure on  $[0, T]$ ), we have

$$m \times P \left\{ (s, \omega) \in \bigcup_{k=0}^N (\sigma_k(\omega), \tau_k(\omega)] \times \Omega; \quad |z_s^i(\omega) - z_s(\omega)|^2 \geq \delta \right\} \leq \frac{\epsilon}{2}$$

This with (124)-(i) implies

$$m \times P \left\{ (s, \omega) \in [0, T] \times \Omega; \quad |z_s^i(\omega) - z_s(\omega)|^2 \geq \delta \right\} \leq \epsilon, \quad \forall \quad i \geq l_{\epsilon\delta}.$$

From this it follows that, for any  $\delta > 0$ ,

$$\lim_{i \rightarrow \infty} m \times P \left\{ (s, \omega) \in [0, T] \times \Omega; \quad |z_s^i(\omega) - z_s(\omega)|^2 \geq \delta \right\} = 0.$$

Thus, on  $[0, T] \times \Omega$ , the sequence  $\{z^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  converges in measure to  $z$ . Since  $\{z^i\}_{i=1}^\infty$  is also bounded in  $L^2_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$ , then for each  $p \in [1, 2)$ , it converges strongly in  $L^p_{\mathcal{F}}(0, T; \mathbf{R}^d)$ .  $\square$

### 7.3 Optional Stopping Theorem for $\mathcal{E}^g$ -Supermartingale

In this subsection the function  $g$  satisfies (i), (ii) of (34). We will discuss  $\mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[\cdot]$  for stopping times  $\sigma, \tau \in \mathcal{S}_T$ . A BSDE with a given terminal condition  $X \in \mathcal{F}_\tau$  at a given terminal time  $\tau \in \mathcal{S}_T$  is formulated as

$$Y_s = X + \int_s^\tau g(r, Y_r, Z_r) dr - \int_s^\tau Z_r dB_r, \quad s \in [0, \tau], \quad (125)$$

or equivalently, on  $s \in [0, T]$ ,

$$Y_s = X + \int_s^T 1_{[0, \tau]}(r) g(r, Y_r, Z_r) dr - \int_s^T 1_{[0, \tau]}(r) Z_r dB_r. \quad (126)$$

We define

$$\mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[X] := Y_\sigma. \quad (127)$$

It is clear that, when  $\sigma = s$  and  $\tau = t$  for deterministic time parameters  $s \leq t$ , then  $\mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[\cdot] = \mathcal{E}^g_{s, t}[\cdot]$ . We have

**Proposition 7.1.** *The system of operators*

$$\mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[\cdot] : L^2(\mathcal{F}_\tau) \rightarrow L^2(\mathcal{F}_\sigma), \quad \sigma \leq \tau, \quad \sigma, \tau \in \mathcal{S}_T,$$

is an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear evaluation, i.e., it satisfies (A1)–(A5) in the following sense: for each  $X, X' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_\tau)$ ,

(a1)  $\mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[X] \geq \mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[X']$ , a.s., if  $X \geq X'$ , a.s.

(a2)  $\mathcal{E}^g_{\tau, \tau}[X] = X$ ;

(a3)  $\mathcal{E}^g_{\rho, \sigma}[\mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[X]] = \mathcal{E}^g_{\rho, \tau}[X]$ ,  $\forall 0 \leq \rho \leq \sigma \leq \tau$ ;

(a4)  $1_A \mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[X] = 1_A \mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[1_A X]$ ,  $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}_\tau$ ;

(a5) for each  $0 \leq \sigma \leq \tau \leq T$ ,

$$\mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[X] - \mathcal{E}^g_{\sigma, \tau}[X'] \leq \mathcal{E}^{g_\mu}_{\sigma, \tau}[X - X'], \quad \forall X, X' \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_\tau). \quad (128)$$

The proof is similar as in the case where  $\rho$ ,  $\sigma$  and  $\tau$  are deterministic. We omit it.

Another easy property is that  $\mathcal{E}_{\cdot \wedge \tau, \tau}[X]$  has continuous paths:

$$(\mathcal{E}_{t \wedge \tau, \tau}^g[X])_{0 \leq t \leq T} \in S_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T). \quad (129)$$

By (32) and (33) with  $1_{[\sigma, \tau]}(s)g(s, y, z)$  in the place of  $g$ , we also have the following estimates

$$\mathbf{E}[|\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[X]|^2] \leq c\mathbf{E}[|X|^2] + c\mathbf{E} \int_{\sigma}^{\tau} |g(s, 0, 0)|^2 ds, \quad (130)$$

and

$$\mathbf{E}[|\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[X - X']|^2] \leq c\mathbf{E}[|X - X'|^2]. \quad (131)$$

where the constant  $c$  depends only on  $T$  and the Lipschitz constant  $C$  of the function  $g$  w.r.t.  $(y, z)$ . As a consequence of

We also have the following estimate:

**Lemma 7.6.** *Let  $\sigma, \tau \in \mathcal{S}_T$ ,  $\sigma \leq \tau$  and  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_{\tau})$ . If  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_{\sigma})$ , then we have*

$$\mathbf{E}[|\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[X] - X|^2] \leq c\mathbf{E} \left[ \int_{\sigma}^{\tau} |g(s, X, 0)|^2 ds \right].$$

where the constant  $c$  depends only on  $T$  and the Lipschitz constant  $C$  of  $g$ .

*Proof.* Observe that  $\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[X] = y_{\sigma}$ , where  $(y_t)_{t \in [0, T]}$  is the solution of the BSDE

$$y_t = X + \int_t^T 1_{[\sigma, \tau]}(s)g(s, y_s, z_s)ds - \int_t^T z_s dB_s.$$

We set  $\bar{y}_t \equiv y_t - X$ ,  $\bar{z}_t \equiv z_t$ , on  $[\sigma, \tau]$ . This pair of adapted process is the solution of the BSDE

$$\bar{y}_t = \int_t^T 1_{[\sigma, \tau]}(s)\bar{g}(s, \bar{y}_s, \bar{z}_s)ds - \int_t^T \bar{z}_s dB_s, \quad t \in [\sigma, \tau].$$

With  $\bar{g}(t, y, z) := g(t, y + X, z)$ , we have  $\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[X] - X = \mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^{\bar{g}}[0]$ . From (130),

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{E}[|\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[X] - X|^2] &= \mathbf{E}[|\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^{\bar{g}}[0]|^2] \\ &\leq c\mathbf{E} \left[ \int_{\sigma}^{\tau} |\bar{g}(s, 0, 0)|^2 ds \right] \\ &= c\mathbf{E} \left[ \int_{\sigma}^{\tau} |g(s, X, 0)|^2 ds \right]. \end{aligned}$$

□

We will prove the following optional stopping theorem:

**Theorem 7.3.** *We assume that the function  $g$  satisfies (i), (ii) of (34). Let  $Y \in D_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$  be an  $\mathcal{E}$ -supermartingale (resp.  $\mathcal{E}$ -submartingale). Then for each  $\sigma, \tau \in \mathcal{S}_T$  such that  $\sigma \leq \tau$ , we have*

$$\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[Y_\tau] \leq Y_\sigma \text{ (resp. } \geq Y_\sigma), \text{ a.s.} \quad (132)$$

To prove the above theorem, we need several lemmas.

**Lemma 7.7.** *Let  $\tau \in \mathcal{S}_T^0$  be valued in  $\{t_0, \dots, t_n\}$  with  $0 = t_0 \leq t_1 < \dots < t_n \leq t_{n+1} = T$ , and let*

$$t_i \leq s < t \leq t_{i+1}, \text{ for some } i \in \{1, 2, \dots, n\}. \quad (133)$$

Then, for each  $X \in \mathcal{F}_{t \wedge \tau}$ ,

$$\begin{cases} (i) \mathcal{E}_{t \wedge \tau, t \wedge \tau}^g[X] = X; \\ (ii) \mathcal{E}_{s \wedge \tau, t \wedge \tau}^g[X] = 1_{\{t \wedge \tau \leq s\}}X + 1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}\mathcal{E}_{s, t}^g[X]. \end{cases} \quad (134)$$

*Proof.* (i) is easy. To prove (ii), we first observe that

$$\{t \wedge \tau \leq s\}^C = \{t \wedge \tau = t\} \quad (135)$$

and  $\{t \wedge \tau \leq s\} = \{t \wedge \tau \leq t_i\}$ . Thus  $1_{\{t \wedge \tau \leq s\}}X \in \mathcal{F}_{t_i}$ . We also have  $1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}X \in \mathcal{F}_t$ . We now solve  $Y_{s \wedge \tau} = \mathcal{E}_{s \wedge \tau, t \wedge \tau}^g[X]$  by, as in (126),

$$Y_{s \wedge \tau} = X + \int_s^T 1_{[0, t \wedge \tau]}(r)g(r, Y_r, Z_r)dr - \int_s^T 1_{[0, t \wedge \tau]}(r)Z_r dB_r. \quad (136)$$

Since  $1_{[0, t \wedge \tau]} = 1_{\{t \wedge \tau \leq t_i\}}1_{[0, t_i]} + 1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}1_{[0, t]}$ . By respectively multiplying  $1_{\{t \wedge \tau \leq t_i\}}$  and  $1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}$  on both sides of (136), we have, on  $s \in [t_i, t]$ ,

$$Y_{s \wedge \tau} 1_{\{t \wedge \tau \leq t_i\}} = X 1_{\{t \wedge \tau \leq t_i\}}, \quad (137)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} Y_{s \wedge \tau} 1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}} &= 1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}X + \int_s^T 1_{[0, t]}(r)1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}g(r, Y_r, Z_r)dr \\ &\quad - \int_s^T 1_{[0, t]}1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}(r)Z_r dB_r \\ &= 1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}X + \int_s^t g(r, 1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}Y_r, 1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}Z_r)dr \\ &\quad - \int_s^t 1_{[0, t_{i+1}]}Z_r dB_r. \end{aligned}$$

We observe that, the last relation implies that, on  $[t_i, t]$ ,

$$Y_{s \wedge \tau} 1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}} = 1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}\mathcal{E}_{s, t}^g[1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}X] = 1_{\{t \wedge \tau = t\}}\mathcal{E}_{s, t}^g[X].$$

This with (137) and (135), we then have (ii).  $\square$

We now treat a simple situation of the above optional stopping theorem.

**Lemma 7.8.** *Let  $Y \in D_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$  be an  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -martingale (respectively  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supermartingale,  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -submartingale). Then for each  $\sigma, \tau \in \mathcal{S}_T^0$  such that  $\sigma \leq \tau$ , we have*

$$\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[Y_\tau] = Y_\sigma, \text{ (resp. } \leq Y_\sigma, \geq Y_\sigma) \text{ a.s.} \quad (138)$$

*Proof.* We only prove the case for  $\mathcal{E}^g$ -supermartingale. It is clear that, once we have

$$\mathcal{E}_{t \wedge \tau, \tau}^g[Y_\tau] \leq Y_{t \wedge \tau}, \quad \forall t \in [0, T], \quad (139)$$

then, (138) hold for each  $\sigma \in \mathcal{S}_T^0$  valued in  $\{s_1, \dots, s_m\}$  since

$$\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[Y_\tau] = \sum_{i=1}^m 1_{\{\sigma=s_i\}} \mathcal{E}_{s_i \wedge \tau, \tau}^g[Y_\tau] \leq \sum_{i=1}^m 1_{\{\sigma=s_i\}} Y_{s_i \wedge \tau} = Y_\sigma.$$

We will prove (139) by deduction. Let  $\tau \in \mathcal{S}_T^0$  be valued in  $\{t_0, \dots, t_n\}$  with  $0 = t_0 \leq t_1 < \dots < t_n \leq t_{n+1} = T$ . Firstly, when  $t \geq t_n$ , (139) holds since  $\mathcal{E}_{t \wedge \tau, \tau}^g[Y_\tau] = \mathcal{E}_{\tau, \tau}^g[Y_\tau] = Y_\tau$ . Now suppose that for a fixed  $i \in \{1, \dots, n\}$ , (139) holds for  $t \geq t_i$ . We shall prove that it also holds for  $t \geq t_{i-1}$ . We need to check the case  $t \in [t_{i-1}, t_i)$ .

Since  $1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau = t_i\}}$  is  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -measurable, by (a4) we have

$$\begin{aligned} 1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau = t_i\}} \mathcal{E}_{t, t_i}^g[Y_{t_i \wedge \tau}] &= 1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau = t_i\}} \mathcal{E}_{t, t_i}^g[1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau = t_i\}} Y_{t_i}] \\ &= 1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau = t_i\}} \mathcal{E}_{t, t_i}^g[Y_{t_i}] \\ &\leq 1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau = t_i\}} Y_t. \end{aligned}$$

It follows from (134)–(ii)

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_{t \wedge \tau, t_i \wedge \tau}^g[Y_{t_i \wedge \tau}] &= 1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau \leq t\}} Y_{t_i \wedge \tau} + 1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau = t_i\}} \mathcal{E}_{t, t_i}^g[Y_{t_i \wedge \tau}] \\ &\leq 1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau \leq t\}} Y_{t_i \wedge \tau} + 1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau = t_i\}} Y_t \\ &= Y_{t \wedge \tau}. \end{aligned}$$

The last step is from  $\{t_i \wedge \tau \leq t\} + \{t_i \wedge \tau = t_i\} = \Omega$  and then  $t \wedge \tau = t_i \wedge \tau 1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau \leq t\}} + t 1_{\{t_i \wedge \tau = t_i\}}$ . From this result we derive

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E}_{t \wedge \tau, \tau}^g[Y_\tau] &= \mathcal{E}_{t \wedge \tau, t_i \wedge \tau}^g[\mathcal{E}_{t_i \wedge \tau, \tau}^g[Y_\tau]] \\ &\leq \mathcal{E}_{t \wedge \tau, t_i \wedge \tau}^g[Y_{t_i \wedge \tau}] \\ &\leq Y_{t \wedge \tau}. \end{aligned}$$

Thus (139) holds for  $t \geq t_{i-1}$ . It follows by deduction that (139) holds for  $t \in [0, T]$ . The proof is complete.  $\square$

We now give

**Proof of Theorem 7.3.** We only prove the supermartingale part. For each  $n = 1, 2, \dots$ , we set

$$\begin{aligned}\sigma_n &:= T \sum_{k=1}^{2^n-1} 2^{-n} k 1_{\{2^{-n}(k-1) \leq \sigma < 2^{-n}k\}} + T 1_{\{\sigma=T\}}, \\ \tau_n &:= T \sum_{k=1}^{2^n-1} 2^{-n} k 1_{\{2^{-n}(k-1) \leq \tau < 2^{-n}k\}} + T 1_{\{\tau=T\}}.\end{aligned}$$

It is clear that  $\sigma_n \searrow \sigma$ ,  $\tau_n \searrow \tau$  and  $\sigma_n \leq \tau_n$ . By the above lemma, for each  $m \geq n$  we have

$$\mathcal{E}_{\sigma_m, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau_n}] \leq Y_{\sigma_m}, \text{ a.s.}$$

It follows from (129) and  $Y \in D_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$  that, for each fixed  $n$ ,  $\mathcal{E}_{\sigma_m, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau_n}] \rightarrow \mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau_n}]$  and  $Y_{\sigma_m} \rightarrow Y_{\sigma}$  in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  as  $m \rightarrow \infty$ . We then have

$$\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau_n}] \leq Y_{\sigma}, \text{ a.s.} \quad (140)$$

Moreover, we have

$$|\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau_n}] - \mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[Y_{\tau}]| \leq |\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau_n}] - \mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau}]| + |\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau}] - \mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[Y_{\tau}]|. \quad (141)$$

Since  $Y_{\tau_n} \rightarrow Y_{\tau}$ , in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , the first term on the right tends to zero in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  because of (131). For the second one, we still use (131):

$$\begin{aligned}\mathbf{E}[|\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau}] - \mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[Y_{\tau}]|^2] &= \mathbf{E}[|\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau}]] - \mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[Y_{\tau}]|^2] \\ &\leq c \mathbf{E}[|\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau_n}^g[Y_{\tau}] - Y_{\tau}|].\end{aligned}$$

But by Lemma 7.6 this term is bounded by  $c^2 \mathbf{E}[\int_{\tau}^{\tau_n} |g(s, Y_{\tau}, 0)|^2 ds]$ . It follows that the term on the left side of (140) tends to  $\mathcal{E}_{\sigma, \tau}^g[Y_{\tau}]$  in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$  as  $n \rightarrow \infty$ . The proof is complete.  $\square$

We will also prove the following optional stopping theorem:

**Theorem 7.4.** *We assume that an  $\mathcal{F}$ -expectation  $\mathcal{E}[\cdot]$  satisfies (78) and (81) for some  $\mu > 0$ . Let  $Y \in D_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$  be an  $\mathcal{E}$ -supermartingale (resp.  $\mathcal{E}$ -submartingale). Then for each  $\sigma, \tau \in \mathcal{S}_T$  we have*

$$\mathcal{E}[Y_{\tau} | \mathcal{F}_{\sigma}] \leq Y_{\tau \wedge \sigma}, \text{ (resp. } \geq Y_{t \wedge \tau}), \text{ a.s.} \quad (142)$$

*Proof.* We only consider the supermartingale case. We first prove that

$$\mathcal{E}[Y_{\tau} | \mathcal{F}_t] \leq Y_{t \wedge \tau} \text{ (resp. } \geq Y_{t \wedge \tau}), \text{ a.s.} \quad (143)$$

Let  $\tau$  be a finite valued:  $\tau = \sum_{i=1}^n 1_{\{\tau=t_i\}} t_i$ , for some  $0 \leq t_1 \leq \dots \leq t_n \leq T$ . If  $t_n \leq t$ , then it is clear that

$$\mathcal{E}[Y_{\tau} | \mathcal{F}_t] = Y_{\tau} = Y_{t \wedge \tau}.$$

If  $t \in [t_{n-1}, t_n]$ , then both  $\{\tau \leq t_{n-1}\}$  and  $\{\tau = t_n\}$  are  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -measurable. By (11) we have



$$\begin{aligned}
 \mathcal{E}[Y_\tau|\mathcal{F}_t] &= \mathcal{E}[Y_{t_n}1_{\{\tau=t_n\}} + Y_{\tau\wedge t_{n-1}}1_{\{\tau\leq t_{n-1}\}}|\mathcal{F}_t] \\
 &= 1_{\{\tau=t_n\}}\mathcal{E}[Y_{t_n}|\mathcal{F}_t] + 1_{\{\tau\leq t_{n-1}\}}\mathcal{E}[Y_{\tau\wedge t_{n-1}}|\mathcal{F}_t] \\
 &\leq 1_{\{\tau=t_n\}}Y_t + 1_{\{\tau\leq t_{n-1}\}}Y_{\tau\wedge t_{n-1}} = Y_{t\wedge\tau}.
 \end{aligned}$$

If  $t \in [t_{n-2}, t_{n-1}]$ , then we have  $\mathcal{E}[Y_\tau|\mathcal{F}_t] = \mathcal{E}[\mathcal{E}[Y_\tau|\mathcal{F}_{t_{n-1}}]|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}[Y_{t_{n-1}\wedge\tau}|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq Y_{t\wedge\tau}$ . We thus can prove an arbitrary case  $t \in [t_i, t_{i+1}]$  by reduction. Thus (142) holds for all finite valued stopping times.

Now for  $\tau \in \mathcal{S}_T$ , we take  $\tau_n$  as in the proof of Theorem 7.3. Since  $Y \in D_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$ , thus  $Y_{\tau_n} \rightarrow Y_\tau$  in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ . We have

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[Y_{\tau_n} - Y_\tau|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}[Y_{\tau_n}|\mathcal{F}_t] - \mathcal{E}[Y_\tau|\mathcal{F}_t] \leq \mathcal{E}^\mu[Y_{\tau_n} - Y_\tau|\mathcal{F}_t].$$

By Lemma 3.3, the right side tends to zero in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ . So does the right side since

$$\mathcal{E}^{-\mu}[Y_{\tau_n} - Y_\tau|\mathcal{F}_t] = -\mathcal{E}^\mu[Y_\tau - Y_{\tau_n}|\mathcal{F}_t].$$

It follows that  $\mathcal{E}[Y_{\tau_n}|\mathcal{F}_t] \rightarrow \mathcal{E}[Y_\tau|\mathcal{F}_t]$  in  $L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ . We then can pass two sides of the inequality

$$Y_{\tau_n\wedge t} \geq \mathcal{E}[Y_{\tau_n}|\mathcal{F}_t]$$

to the limit to get (143).

Since both  $(\mathcal{E}[Y_\tau|\mathcal{F}_t])_{t \in [0, T]} \in \mathcal{S}_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$  and  $(Y_{t\wedge\tau})_{t \in [0, T]} \in D_{\mathcal{F}}^2(0, T)$  we can easily derive from (143) that for each  $\sigma, \tau \in \mathcal{S}_T$ , we have (142).  $\square$

## Notes

The expectation  $\mathbf{E}[\cdot]$  on the probability space  $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$  with  $\mathcal{F}_t \subset \mathcal{F}$ ,  $t \geq 0$  is clearly  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent. Another example of linear  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent expectation is  $\mathbf{E}_Q[\cdot]$ , the expectation under Girsanov transformation  $dQ/dP$ . But it seems that the study of  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear expectations is still a very new subject. In 1997, [Peng1997b] (see also [Peng1997a]) introduced the notion of  $g$ -expectations which is nonlinear and  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent. In the same year, the notion of  $g$ -evaluation was introduced in [Peng1997a] under the name “stochastic backward semigroup”. See also [30]. The term “ $\mathcal{F}_t$ -consistent nonlinear expectation” was named in [CHMP2002].

Linear BSDE was first introduced by Bismut in [Bis1973], [Bis1978]. Bensoussan developed this approach in [Ben1981] and [Ben1982]. The existence and uniqueness theorem of a nonlinear BSDE, i.e., Theorem 3.1 was obtained in Pardoux and Peng [PP1990]. The present version of the proof was based on El Karoui, Peng and Quenez [EPQ1997]. [EPQ1997] is also a good survey of BSDE and related fields. Comparison Theorem of BSDE i.e., Theorem 3.3 was obtained in [Peng1992] for the case  $g$  is  $C^1$  in  $(y, z)$ . The present case where  $g$  is Lipschitz in  $(y, z)$  was obtained in [EPQ1997]. [EPQ1997] also observed and investigated a natural relation between BSDE theory and the problem of pricing financial derivatives. We also refer to Yong and Zhou [YZ1999] for a

systematic presentation of BSDE theory. Due to the limitation of the size of this lecture, we can not present many important subjects of BSDE theory.

In 1998, Chen [Chen98] has proved the following interesting property: if  $\mathcal{E}_{g^1}[X] = \mathcal{E}_{g^2}[X']$ , for all  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , then the two generators  $g^1$  and  $g^2$  also coincide:  $g^1(s, y, z) \equiv g^2(s, y, z)$ . This result was generalized to an “inverse comparison theorem” by [BCHMP2000] and then [CHMP2001]: if  $\mathcal{E}_{g^1}[X] \geq \mathcal{E}_{g^2}[X']$ , for all  $X \in L^2(\mathcal{F}_T)$ , then  $g^1 \geq g^2$ .

The well - known Doob - Meyer decomposition theorem can be found in most standard text books of stochastic analysis e.g., [DM1978-1982], [HWY1992], [IW1981], [KShr1998] and [RW2000]. Decomposition theorem of  $g$  - supermartingale of Doob - Meyer's type, i.e., Theorem 3.9 was obtained by Peng [Peng1999]. A new method, i.e., penalization method, was applied to prove this nonlinear decomposition theorem. This method was firstly introduced in BSDE theory by [EKPPQ1997]. The monotonic limit theorem for Itô's processes (Theorem 7.2) as well as for BSDEs (Theorem 3.8) are also obtained in [Peng1999]. Using this penalization method, Chen and Peng [CP1998] to the  $L^1$  case with the usual filtration, which generalizes the Meyer's result to a nonlinear situation. These penalization method and limit theorem were then applied to prove the nonlinear supermartingale decomposition theorem for an abstract  $\mathcal{E}$ -expectation, i.e., Theorem 4.3. Theorem 4.3 was proved in [CHMP2002]. This type of decomposition theorem for a more general situation, i.e., the case for  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -evaluation, was recently obtained in [Peng2003b].

The representation theorem of an  $\mathcal{F}_t$ -expectation by a  $g$  - expectation, i.e., Theorem 4.4 was obtained in [CHMP2002]. The more general case, i.e., Theorem 4.5 was obtained in [Peng2003b].

## References

- [ADEH1999] Artzner, P., Delbaen, F., Eber, J.M. and Heath, D. Coherent measures of risk, *Math. Finance*, **9**, 203–228, 1999.
- [Bis1973] Bismut, J.M. *Conjugate Convex Functions in Optimal Stochastic Control*, *J.Math. Anal. Apl.* 44, pp.384-404, 1973.
- [Bis1978] Bismut, J.M. *Contrôle des systemes linéaires quadratiques : applications de l'intégrale stochastique*, Sémin. Proba. XII., *Lect. Notes in Mathematics*, 649, pp.180-264, 1978, Springer.
- [Ben1981] Bensoussan, A. *Lecture on stochastic control*, *Lecture Notes in Mathematics*, Vol.972, Springer-Verlag, 1981.
- [Ben1982] Bensoussan, A., *Stochastic Control by Functional Analysis Methods*, North-Holland, 1982.
- [BCHMP2000] P. Briand, F. Coquet, Y. Hu, J. Mémin and S. Peng, *A converse comparison theorem for BSDEs and related properties of g-expectations*, *Electron. Comm. Probab*, **5** (2000).
- [Chen98] Z. Chen, *A property of backward stochastic differential equations*, *C.R. Acad. Sci. Paris Sér. I Math.* **326** (1998), no 4, 483–488.
- [CE2002] Z. Chen and L. Epstein (2002), *Ambiguity, Risk and Asset Returns in Continuous Time*, *Econometrica*, **70**(4), 1403–1443.

- [CHMP2001] P. Briand, F. Coquet, Y. Hu, J. Mémin and S. Peng, (2001) *A general converse comparison theorem for Backward stochastic differential equations*, C.R.Acad. Sci. Paris, **t. 333**, Serie I, 577–581.
- [CHMP2002] F. Coquet, Y. Hu J. Memin and S. Peng (2002), *Filtration-consistent nonlinear expectations and related g-expectations*, Probab. Theory Relat. Fields, **123**, 1–27.
- [CP1998] Z. Chen and S. Peng (1998) *A Nonlinear Doob-Meyer type Decomposition and its Application*. SUT Journal of Mathematics (Japan), **34**, No.2, 197–208, 1998.
- [CP200] Z. Chen and S. Peng (2000), A general downcrossing inequality for  $g$ -martingales, *Statist. Probab. Lett.* **46**, no. 2, 169–175.
- [CQZ2000] J. Cvitanic, M.C. Quenez and F. Zapatero, (2000) *Incomplete information with recursive preference*, preprint.
- [DF1992] D. Duffie and L. Epstein (1992), Stochastic differential utility, *Econometrica* **60**, no 2, 353–394.
- [Duffie] D. Duffie (2001) *Dynamic Asset Pricing*, Princeton University Press.
- [EKPPQ1997] N. El Karoui, C. Kapoudjian, E. Pardoux, S. Peng and M.-C. Quenez (1997), *Reflected Solutions of Backward SDE and Related Obstacle Problems for PDEs*, *Ann. Probab.* **25**, no 2, 702–737.
- [EPQ1997] N. El Karoui, N., S. Peng and M.-C. Quenez, *Backward stochastic differential equation in finance*, *Math. Finance* **7** (1997), no 1, 1–71.
- [EQ1995] El Karoui, N., and M.C.Quenez (1995), Dynamic Programming and Pricing of Contingent Claims in Incomplete Marke, SIAM J.of Control and Optimization, 33, n.1.
- [FS1992] Fleming, W.H. and Soner H.M., *Controlled Markov Processes and Viscosity Solutions*, Springer-Verleg, New York, 1992.
- [FoSc2002] Föllmer H. and Alexander Schied, Convex measures of risk and trading constraints, preprint, version 2002.
- [Frittelli2000] Frittelli, M. (2000) Representing sublinear risk measures and Pricing rules, Working paper no. 10, Universita di Milano Bicocca, Italy.
- [FR-G2002] Frittelli, M. and Rosazza Gianin E. (2002) Putting oders in risk measures, *J. Banking and Finance*, Vol. 26, no.26, 1473–1486.
- [HWY1992] He, S.W., Wang, J.G. and Yan J.-A. (1992) *Semimartingale Theory and Stochastic Calculus*, CRC Press, Beijing.
- [IW1981] Ikeda, N. and Watanabe, S., *Stochastic Differential Equations and Diffusion Processes*, North-Holland, Amsterdam, 1981.
- [KShr1998] Karatzas, I. and Shreve, S. E., *Brownian Motion and Stochastic Calculus*, Springer-Verleg, New York, 1988.
- [DM1978-1982] Dellacherie, C. and Meyer, P.A., *Probabilities and Potentiel A and B*, Chap. North-Holland, 1978 and 1982.
- [PP1990] E. Pardoux and S. Peng (1990), *Adapted solution of a backward stochastic differential equation*, *Systems and Control Letters* **14**, no 1, 55–61.
- [Peng1992] S. Peng (1992), A generalized dynamic programming principle and Hamilton-Jacobi-Bellman equation, *Stochastic stoch. reports* **38**, no 2, 119–134.
- [Peng1997a] S. Peng, BSDE and Stochastic Optimizations, in *Topics in Stochastic Analysis*, J. Yan, S. Peng, S. Fang and L.M. Wu, Ch.2, (Chinese vers.), Science Publication 1997.

- [Peng1997b] S. Peng (1997), BSDE and related  $g$ -expectation, in *Pitman Research Notes in Mathematics Series, no.364*, "Backward Stochastic Differential Equation", Ed. by N. El Karoui & L. Mazliak,, 141–159.
- [Peng1999] S.Peng (1999), Monotonic limit theorem of BSDE and nonlinear decomposition theorem of Doob-Meyer's type, *Prob. Theory Rel. Fields* **113**, no 4, 473-499.
- [Peng2002] S. Peng (2002), *Nonlinear expectations and nonlinear Markov chains*, in The proceedings of the 3rd Colloquium on "Backward Stochastic Differential Equations and Applications", Weihai, 2002.
- [Peng2003a] S.Peng, (2003) The mechanism of evaluating risky values and nonlinear expectations, preprints.
- [Peng2003b] S.Peng, (2003), Dynamical consistent nonlinear evaluations and expectations, preprint.
- [Peng2003c] Peng, S. (2003) Filtration consistent nonlinear expectations and evaluations of contingent Claims, to appear in *Acta Math. Appl. Sinica*.
- [PX2003] Peng, S. and Xu, M. (2003) Numerical calculations to solve BSDE, preprint 2003.
- [RW2000] Rogers, L.C.G. & Williams, D., *Diffusions, Markov processes and martingales*, Cambridge University Press, 2000.
- [Roazza2003] Rosazza, E. G., (2003) Some examples of risk measures via  $g$ -expectations, preprint.
- [Yan1985] Yan J.-A. (1985) *On the commutability of essential infimum and conditional expectation operators*, Chinese Science Bulletin, **30**(8), 1013–1018.
- [YZ1999] Yong, J. and Zhou, X. *Stochastic Controls: Hamiltonian Systems and HJB Equations*, Springer, 1999.
- [Yosida1980] K. Yosida (1980), *Functional Analysis*, Springer-Verlag,, 6th edition

## References on BSDE and Nonlinear Expectations

1. Fabio Antonelli, Backward-Forward stochastic differential equations, *Ann. Appl. Prob.* 1993, Vol.3, No.3 777–793
2. Fabio Antonelli, Stability of backward stochastic differential equations *STOCH PROC APPL* 62 (1): 103-114 MAR 1996.
3. Fabio Antonelli, Emilio Barucci, Mancino, Maria Elvira Asset pricing with a forward-backward stochastic differential utility. *Econ. Lett.* 72, No.2, 151-157 (2001).
4. Fabio Antonelli, E. Barucci, ME Mancino, A comparison result for FBSDE with applications to decisions theory, *Math. Method Oper. Res.* 54 (3): 407-423 FEB 2002
5. Fabio Antonelli, Kohatsu-Higa A Filtration stability of backward SDE's *STOCH ANAL APPL* 18 (1): 11-37 JAN 2000
6. Fabio Antonelli, Jin Ma, Weak solutions of forward-backward SDE's *Stoch. Anal. Appl.* 21 (3): 493-514 MAY 2003
7. Khaled Bahlali, Backward-Forward stochastic differential equations with locally Lipschitz coefficient, *C.R.A.S. Paris*, t.333, I, 481–486, 2001.
8. Khaled Bahlail, Mezzerdi Brahim, M.Hassani, Youssef Ouknine, Some generic properties in backward stochastic differential equations with continuous coefficient. *Monte Carlo Methods Appl.* 7, No.1-2, 15-19 (2001).

9. Khaled Bahlail, E.H.Essaky, M.Hassani, E.Pardoux, Existence, uniqueness and stability of backward stochastic differential equations with locally monotone coefficient. (English. Abridged French version) C. R., Math., Acad. Sci. Paris 335, No.9, 757-762 (2002).
10. Khaled Bahlail, El Essaky, Youssef Ouknine, Reflected backward stochastic differential equation with jumps and locally Lipschitz coefficient. Random Oper. Stoch. Equ. 10, No.4, 335-350 (2002).
11. Vlad Bally, Construction of asymptotically optimal controls for control and game problems, Proba. Theory Relat. Fields 111, 453-467 (1996)
12. Vlad Bally, A. Matoussi, Weak solutions for SPDE's and backward doubly stochastic differential equations. J. Theor. Probab. 14, No.1, 125-164 (2001).
13. Vlad Bally, Pages G Error analysis of the optimal quantization algorithm for obstacle problems, Stoch. Proc. Appl. 106 (1): 1-40 JUL 2003
14. Philippe Briand, A Remark On Generalized Feynman-Kac Formula, CR Acad. Sci. I-Math 321 (10): 1315-1318 Nov 16 1995
15. Philippe Briand, Ying Hu, Stability of BSDEs with Random Terminal Time and homogenization of Semilinear Elliptic PDEs, J. of Functional Analysis 155, 455-494, (1998)
16. Philippe Briand, B.Delyon, J. Memin, On the robustness of backward stochastic differential equations, Stoch. Proc. Appl. 97 (2): 229-253 FEB 2002
17. Philippe Briand, B. Delyon, Y. Hu, E. Pardoux L-p solutions of backward stochastic differential equations, Stoch. Proc. Appl. 108 (1): 109-129, 2003
18. Rainer Buckdahn, Backward stochastic differential equations. Option hedging under additional cost. Bolthausen, Erwin (ed.) et al., Seminar on stochastic analysis, random fields and applications. Proceedings of a seminar held at the Centro Stefano Franscini, Ascona, Switzerland, June 7-12, 1993. Basel: Birkhauser. Prog. Probab. 36, 307-318 (1995).
19. Rainer Buckdahn, Ying Hu, Pricing of American contingent claims with jump stock price and constrained portfolios, Math. Oper. Res. 23 (1): 177-203 Feb 1998.
20. Rainer Buckdahn, Ying Hu, Hedging contingent claims for a large investor in an incomplete market, Adv. Appl. Probab. 30 (1): 239-255 MAR 1998.
21. Rainer Buckdahn, Ying Hu, Probabilistic approach to homogenizations of systems of quasilinear parabolic PDEs with periodic structures, Nonlinear Analysis, Theory and Methods.
22. Rainer Buckdahn, Jin Ma, Stochastic viscosity solutions for nonlinear stochastic partial differential equations. Part I, Stoch. Processes.
23. Rainer Buckdahn, Jin Ma, Stochastic viscosity solutions for nonlinear stochastic partial differential equations. Part II, Stoch. Processes.
24. Rainer Buckdahn, E.Pardoux, Backward stochastic differential equations and integral-partial differential equations. Stochastics Stochastics Rep. 60, No.1-2, 57-83 (1997).
25. Rainer Buckdahn, Mare Quincampolx et Aurel Rascanu, Propriete de viabilite pour des equations differentielles stochastiques retrogrades et applications a des equations aux derivees partielles, C.R.A.S. Paris, t.325, I, 1159-1162, 1997.
26. Rainer Buckdahn, Shige Peng, Stationary backward stochastic differential equations and associated partial differential equations. Probab. Theory Relat. Fields 115, No.3, 383-399 (1999).

27. Rainer Buckdahn, M.Quincampoix, A.Rascanu, Viability property for a backward stochastic differential equation and applications to partial differential equations, *Probab Theory Rel. Fields* 116 (4): 485-504 APR 2000.
28. A. Cadenillas, A stochastic maximum principle for systems with jumps, with applications to finance, *Syst Control Lett* 47 (5): 433-444 Dec 16 2002
29. Zhigang Cao, Jia-An Yan, A Comparison Theorem for Solutions of Backward Stochastic Differential Equations, *Advance in Mathematics*, Vol. 28, NO. 4, 1999. 304-308.
30. Z. Chen and S. Peng (2001), Continuous Properties of  $g$ -martingales, *Chin. Ann. of Math.* **22B**: 1, 115-128.
31. Shuping Chen, XunJing Li, XunYu Zhou, Stochastic linear quadratic regulators with indefinite control weight costs, *SIAM J. Control Optim.* Vol. 38, No. 5, 1685-1702, September 1998.
32. Shuping Chen, Jiongmin Yong, Stochastic linear quadratic optimal control problems with random coefficients, *Chin. Ann.of Math.* 21B: 3(2000), 323-338.
33. Shuping Chen, XunYu Zhou, Stochastic linear quadratic regulators with indefinite control weight costs. II *SIAM J Control Optim* 39 (4): 1065-1081 Dec. 20 2000
34. Shuping Chen, Jiongmin Yong, Stochastic linear quadratic optimal control problems, *Appl. Math. Opt.* 43 (1): 21-45 Jan-Feb 2001
35. Zengjing Chen, Existence and uniqueness for BSDE with stopping time, *Chinese Sci Bull* 43 (2): 96-99 Jan 1998
36. Zengjing Chen, A proberly of backward stochastic differential equations, *C.R.A.S. Paris*, t.326, I, 483-488, (1998)
37. Zengjing Chen, A new proof of Doob-Meyer decomposition theorem, *C.R.A.S. Paris*, t.328, I, 919-924, 1999,'
38. Zengjing Chen, Shige Peng, A general Downcrossing Inequality for  $g$ -Martingales, *Statistics and Prob. Letters*, **45**, 1999.
39. Zengjing Chen, Bo Wang, Infinite time interval BSDES and the convergence of  $g$ -martingales, *J Aust Math Soc A* 69: 187-211 Part 2 Oct 2000
40. Zengjing Chen, Xiangrong Wang, Comonotonicity of backward stochastic differential equations.
41. Zengjing Chen, ShiGe Peng, Continuous properties of  $G$ -martingales, *Chinese Ann Math B* 22 (1): 115-128 JAN 2001
42. Zengjing Chen, L. Epstein, Ambiguity,risk, and asset returns in continuous time, *Econometrica* 70 (4):1403-1443 Jul 2002
43. D. Chevance, Discretization of Pardoux-Peng's backward stochastic differential equations, *Z Angew Math Mech* 76: 323-326 Suppl. 3 1996
44. D. Chevance, Numerical methods for backward stochastic differential equations. Rogers, L. C. G. (ed.) et al., *Numerical methods in finance*. Session at the Isaac Newton Institute, Cambridge, GB, 1995. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ. Press. 232-244 (1997).
45. Adam Cmiel, Gurgul, Henryk, Stochastic backward-lag-type Leontief model. *Cent. Eur. J. Oper. Res. Econ.* 5, No.1, 5-22 (1997).
46. Constantin, Adrian A backward stochastic differential equation with non-Lipschitz coefficients. *C. R. Math. Acad. Sci., Soc. R. Can.* 17, No.6, 280-282 (1995).

47. Francois Coquet, Resolution explicite d'une EDSR conduite par un processus de Poisson avec reflexion a la frontiere. (Explicit solution of a stochastic backward differential equation driven by Poisson process with reflection at the boundary). (French) Fascicule de probabilite. Publications, 1996 – 1997. Rennes: Universite de Rennes I, Institut de Recherche Mathematiques de Rennes, Publ. Inst. Rech. Math. Rennes. 1996, 1-3 (1997).
48. Francois Coquet, Ying Hu, Jean Memin, Shige Peng, A general converse comparison theorem for backward stochastic differential equations. (English. Abridged French version) C. R. Acad. Sci., Paris, Serie. I, Math. 333, No.6, 577-581 (2001).
49. F. Coquet, Y. Hu, J. Memin S. Peng, Filtrition Consistent Nonlinear Expectations and Related  $g$ -Expectations, *Probab. Theory Relat. Fields* **123**, 1-27, 2002.
50. Domenico Cuoco, Jaksa Cvitanic, Optimal consumption choices for a 'large' investor, *J. of Economic Dynamics and Control* 22(1998) 401–436.
51. Jaksa Cvitanic, Ioannis Karatzas, Hedging contingent claims with constrained portfolios, *The Annals of Proba.* 1993. Vol. 3, No. 4, 652–681.
52. Jaksa Cvitanic, Ioannis Karatzas, Backward Stochastic Differential Equations with Reflection and Dynkin games, *The Annals of Prob.* 1996, Vol. 24, No. 4 2024–2056.
53. Jaksa Cvitanic, Karatzas, Ioannis, Soner, H.Mete Backward stochastic differential equations with constraints on the gains-process. *Ann. Probab.* 26, No.4, 1522-1551 (1998).
54. R.W.R.Darling, Constructing gamma-martingales with prescribed limit, using backward sde, *The Annals of Proba.* 1995, Vol. 23, No.3, 1234–1261
55. F. Delarue On the existence and uniqueness of solutions to FBSDEs in a non-degenerate case *STOCH PROC APPL* 99 (2): 209-286 JUN 2002
56. A. Dermoune, S. Hamadene and Y. Ouknine, Backward Stochastic Differential Equation with Local time, *Stochastic and Stochastic Rep.* 66, No.1-2, 103-119 (1999).
57. D. Ding A note on probabilistic interpretation for quasilinear mixed boundary problems, *Appl Math Mech-Engl* 18 (9): 857-864 SEP 1997
58. N. Doluchaev, Xunyu Zhou Stochastic controls with terminal contingent conditions, *J Math Anal Appl* 238 (1): 143-165 Oct 1 1999
59. Jim Douglas, Jin Ma, Protter, Philip Numerical methods for forward-backward stochastic differential equations. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* 6, No.3, 940-968 (1996).
60. Darrell Duffie and Larry G.Epstein Appendix C with Costis Skiadas, *Stochastic Differential Utility*, *Econometrica*, Vol.60, No.2 (March, 1992) 353–394.
61. Es-Saky EH, Ouknine Y Convergence of backward stochastic differential equations and homogenization of semilinear variational inequalities in a convex set, *B Sci Math* 126 (5): 413-431 Jun 2002
62. El Karoui, Backward stochastic differential equations. A general introduction. El Karoui, Nicole (ed.) et al., *Backward stochastic differential equations*. Harlow: Longman. Pitman Res. Notes Math. Ser. 364, 7-26 (1997).
63. El-Karoui, S.Hamadene, BSDEs and risk-sensitive control, zero-sum and nonzero-sum game problems of stochastic functional differential equations, *Stoch Proc Appl* 107 (1): 145-169 Sep 2003.
64. El Karoui, S.J.Huang, A general result of existence and uniqueness of backward stochastic differential equations.

65. EL Karoui, M.C. Quenez, Dynamic programming and pricing of contingent claims in an incomplete market (c) SIAM J.Control and Optimization Vol.33.No.1.pp.29-66. 1995
66. El Karoui, M. C. Quenez, Nonlinear pricing theory and backward stochastic differential equations. Biais, B. (ed.) et al., Financial mathematics. Lectures given at the 3rd session of the Centro Internazionale Matematico Estivo (CIME), held in Bressanone, Italy, July 8-13, 1996. Berlin: Springer. Lect. Notes Math. 1656, 191-246 (1997)
67. El-Karoui, M.C.Quenez, Imperfect markets and backward stochastic differential equations. Rogers, L. C. G. (ed.) et al., Numerical methods in finance. Session at the Isaac Newton Institute, Cambridge, GB, 1995. Cambridge: Cambridge Univ. Press. 181-214 (1997)
68. El Karoui, C.Kapoudjian, E.Pardoux S. Peng, M.C. Quenez, Reflected solutions of backward SDE's, and related obstacle problems for PDE's, Ann Probab 25 (2): 702-737 Apr 1997
69. El Karoui, Shige Peng, M.C.Quenez, Backward stochastic differential equations in finance, Math Financ 7 (1): 1-71 Jan 1997
70. El Karoui, Shige Peng, M.C.Quenez, A dynamic maximum principle for the optimization of recursive utilities under constraints Ann. Appl. Prob. 11 (3): 664-693 AUG 2001.
71. El Karoui, L.Pardoux and M.C.quenez, Reflected Backward SDEs and America Options
72. K.D. Elworthy, Stochastic Differential Geometry, Bull. Sc. Math., 2c serie, 117. 1993. 7-27
73. M.Erraoui, Ouknine, Youssef, A.Sbi, Backward stochastic differential equations with distribution as terminal condition. Random Oper. Stoch. Equ. 5, No.4, 349-356 (1997).
74. M. Erraoui, Y. Ouknine, A. Sbi, Reflected solutions of backward stochastic differential equations with distribution as terminal condition. Random Oper. Stoch. Equ. 6, No.1, 1-16 (1998).
75. Anne Estrade, Monique Pontier, Backward stochastic differential equations in a Lie group. Azema, Jacques (ed.) et al., Seminaire de Probabilite XXXV. Berlin: Springer. Lect. Notes Math. 1755, 241-259 (2001).
76. Marco Fuhrman, Gianmario Tessitore, Nonlinear Kolmogorov equations in infinite dimensional spaces: the backward stochastic differential equations approach and applications to optimal control. Ann. Probab. 30, No.3, 1397-1465 (2002).
77. G. Gaudron, E.Pardoux, Backward stochastic differential equations (BSDE), weak convergence and homogenization of semilinear parabolic differential equations (PDE), Ann I H Poincare-Pr 37 (1): 1-42 Jan-Feb 2001
78. G. Gaudron, Convergence of BSDEs and homogenization of elliptic semilinear PDEs, Stoch Anal Appl 20 (4): 791-813 Jul 2002
79. Gegout-Petit, E.Pardoux, Equations diffrentielles stochastiques retrogrades reflashies dans un convexe. (Backward stochastic differential equations reflected in a convex domain). (French) Stochastics Stochastics Rep. 57, No.1-2, 111-128 (1996).
80. S. Hamadene, Nonzero sum Linear-quadratic Stochastic Differential Games and Backward-Forward Equations, Stochastic Analysis and Applications, 17(1), 117-130 (1990).



81. S. Hamadene, Equations différentielles stochastiques retrogrades: Les cas localement lipschitziens. (Backward stochastic differential equations: The locally Lipschitz case). (French) Ann. Inst. Henri Poincaré Probab. Stat. 32, No.5, 645-659 (1997).
82. S. Hamadene, Backward-forward SDEs and stochastic differential games, Stochastic process and their applications 77 (1998) 1-15.
83. S. Hamadene, Nonzero sum linear-quadratic stochastic differential games and backward-forward equations. Stochastic Anal. Appl. 17, No.1, 117-130 (1999).
84. S. Hamadene, Multidimensional backward stochastic differential equations with uniformly continuous coefficients Bernoulli 9 (3): 517-534 Jun 2003.
85. S. Hamadene, J.P. Lepeltier, Reflected BSDEs and mixed game problem, Stochastic Process and their Applications 85 (2000) 177-188
86. S. Hamadene, J.P. Lepeltier, Zero-sum stochastic differential games and backward equations. Syst. Control Lett. 24, No.4, 259-263 (1995)
87. S. Hamadene, J.P. Lepeltier, Backward equations, stochastic control and zero-sum stochastic differential games. Stochastics Stochastics Rep. 54, No.3-4, 221-231 (1995).
88. S. Hamadene, J.P. Lepeltier and Zhen Wu, Infinite horizon Reflected Backward Stochastic Differential Equations and Applications in Mixed control and Game problems, Probability and Mathematical Statistics, Math. Stat. 19, No.2, 211-234 (1999).
89. S. Hamadene, Y. Ouknine, Reflected backward stochastic differential equation with jumps and random obstacle. Electron. J. Probab. 8, Paper No.2, 20 p., electronic only (2003).
90. M. Hassani, Y. Ouknine, On a general result for backward stochastic differential equations. Stochastics Stochastics Rep. 73, No.3-4, 219-240 (2002).
91. M. Hassani, Y. Ouknine, Infinite dimensional BSDE with jumps, Stoch Anal Appl 20 (3): 519-565 May 2002.
92. Zhiyuan Huang, Qingquan Lin, The Weak Solutions for Stochastic Differential Equations with Terminal Conditions, Mathematica Applicata 1997,10(4): 60-64
93. Ying Hu, Shige Peng, Adapted solution of a backward semilinear stochastic evolution equation. Stochastic Anal. Appl. 9, No.4, 445-459 (1991).
94. Ying Hu, Probabilistic interpretations of a system of quasilinear elliptic partial differential equations under Neumann boundary conditions, Stochastic Process and Their Applications 48 (1993) 107-121
95. Ying Hu, Shige Peng, Solution Of Forward-Backward Stochastic Differential-Equations, Probab. Theory Rel. Fiel. 103 (2): 273-283 OCT 1995
96. Ying Hu, Jiongmin Yong, Forward-backward stochastic differential equations with nonsmooth coefficients, Stoch Proc Appl 87 (1): 93-106 May
97. Ying Hu Shige Peng, Solution of forward-backward stochastic differential equations. Probab. Theory Relat. Fields 103, No.2, 273-283 (1995).
98. Ying Hu, Shige Peng, A stability theorem of backward stochastic differential equations and its application. (English. Abridged French version) C. R. Acad. Sci., Paris, Serie. I 324, No.9, 1059-1064 (1997).
99. Ying Hu, On the existence of solution to one-dimensional forward-backward SDEs, Stoch Anal Appl 18 (1): 101-111 Jan 2000
100. Ying Hu Potential Kernels associated with a filtration and Forward Backward SDEs, Potential Analysis 10:103-118,1999

101. Ying Hu, Jin Ma, Jiongmin Yong, On semi-linear degenerate backward stochastic partial differential equations. *Probab. Theory Relat. Fields* 123, No.3, 381-411 (2002).
102. Ying Hu, Xunyu Zhou, Indefinite stochastic Riccati equations *SIAM J CONTROL OPTIM* 42 (1): 123-137 2003
103. Ying Hu, On the solution of forward-backward SDEs with monotone and continuous coefficients, *Nonlinear Analysis* 42 1-12
104. Ying Hu, Jiongmin Yong, Forward-Backward stochastic differential equations with nonsmooth coefficients
105. Wilfrid S. Kendall, Probability, convexity, and Harmonic Maps II. Smoothness via probabilistic gradient inequalities, *J. of Functional Analysis* 126:228-257(1994)
106. Magdalena Kobylanski, Existence and uniqueness results for backward stochastic differential equations when the generator has a quadratic growth, *CR Acad Sci I-Math* 324 (1): 81-86 Jan 1997
107. Magdalena Kobylanski, Backward stochastic differential equations and partial differential equations with quadratic growth. *Ann. Probab.* 28, No.2, 558-602 (2000).
108. Michael Kohlmann, Reflected forward backward stochastic differential equations and contingent claims. Chen, Shuping (ed.) et al., *Control of distributed parameter and stochastic systems. Proceedings of the international conference (IFIP WG 7.2), Hangzhou, China, June 19-22, 1998.* Boston, MA: Kluwer Academic Publishers. 223-230 (1999)
109. Michael Kohlmann, Shanjian Tang, New developments in backward stochastic Riccati equations and their applications. Kohlmann, Michael (ed.) et al., *Mathematical finance. Workshop of the mathematical finance research project, Konstanz, Germany, October 5-7, 2000.* Basel: Birkhauser. 194-214 (2001).
110. Michael Kohlmann, Shanjian Tang, Global adapted solution of one-dimensional backward stochastic Riccati equations, with application to the mean-variance hedging, *Stoch Proc Appl* 97 (2): 255-288 Feb 2002.
111. Michael Kohlmann, Shanjian Tang, Multidimensional backward stochastic Riccati equations and applications, *SIAM J CONTROL OPTIM* 41 (6): 1696-1721. 2003
112. Michael Kohlmann, Shanjian Tang, Minimization of risk and linear quadratic optimal control theory, *SIAM J Control Optim* 42 (3): 1118-1142 2003.
113. Michael Kohlmann, Xunyu Zhou, Relationship between backward stochastic differential equations and stochastic controls: A linear-quadratic approach. *SIAM J. Control Optimization* 38, No.5, 1392-1407 (2000).
114. Zai Lanjri, A class of two-parameter backward stochastic differential equations driven by a Brownian sheet. *Stochastic Anal. Appl.* 20, No.4, 883-899 (2002).
115. A.Lazrak, M.C.Quenez MC, A generalized stochastic differential utility, *Math Oper Res* 28 (1): 154-180 Feb 2003
116. A. Lejay, BSDE driven by Dirichlet process and semi-linear parabolic PDE. Application to homogenization, *Stoch Proc Appl* 97 (1): 1-39 Jan 2002
117. J.P.Lepeltier, San Martin, Jaime, Backward stochastic differential equations with continuous coefficient. *Stat. Probab. Lett.* 32, No.4, 425-430 (1997).
118. J.P.Lepeltier, San Martin, Jaime, On the existence or non-existence of solutions for certain backward stochastic differential equations *BERNOULLI* 8 (1): 123-137 FEB 2002

119. J.P.Lepeltier, Jean-Pierre, San Martin, Jaime, On the existence or non-existence of solutions for certain backward stochastic differential equations. *Bernoulli* 8, No.1, 123-137 (2002).
120. Juan Li, Zhen Wu, Fully coupled forward-backward stochastic differential equations with Brownian motion and Poisson processes under local Lipschitz condition. (Chinese. English summary) *Math. Appl.* 15, No.2, 40-47 (2002).
121. Xunjing Li, Shanjian Tang, General necessary conditions for partially observed optimal stochastic controls, *J. Appl. Prob.* 32. 1118-1137(1995)
122. AEB Lim, Xunyu Zhou, Linear-quadratic control of backward stochastic differential equations. *SIAM J. Control Optimization* 40, No.2, 450-474 (2001).
123. AEB Lim, Xunyu Zhou, Optimal control of linear backward stochastic differential equations with a quadratic cost criterion *LECT NOTES CONTR INF* 280: 301-317 2002
124. AEB Lim, Xunyu Zhou, Mean-variance portfolio selection with random parameters in a complete market, *Math Oper Res* 27 (1): 101-120 Feb 2002
125. Jianzhong Lin, Adapted solution of a backward stochastic nonlinear Volterra integral equation. *Stochastic Anal. Appl.* 20, No.1, 165-183 (2002).
126. Qinqian Lin, Solution of backward stochastic differential equations with jumps and quasi-continuous generator. (Chinese. English summary) *J. Shandong Univ., Nat. Sci. Ed.* 35, No.2, 121-125 (2000).
127. Qinqian Lin, Shige Peng, Smallest g-supersolution for BSDE with continuous drift coefficients *CHINESE ANN MATH B* 21 (3): 359-366 JUL 2000
128. Linear, degenerate backward stochastic partial differential equations, *Lect Notes Math* 1702: 103-136 1999
129. Jicheng Liu, Ren, Jiagang Comparison theorem for solutions of backward stochastic differential equations with continuous coefficient. *Stat. Probab. Lett.* 56, No.1, 93-100 (2002).
130. Yazeng Liu, Shige Peng, Infinite horizon backward stochastic differential equation and exponential convergence index assignment of stochastic control systems. *Automatica* 38, No.8, 1417-1423 (2002).
131. Chenghu Ma, An existence theorem of intertemporal recursive utility in the presence of levy jumps, *J. of Mathematical Economics* 34 (2000) 509-526.
132. Jin Ma, Philip Protter, San Martin Jaime, Torres, Soledad Numerical method for backward stochastic differential equations. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* 12, No.1, 302-316 (2002).
133. Jin Ma, Philip Protter and Jiongmin Yong, Solving forward -backward stochastic differential equations explicitly, a four step scheme, *Probab.Theory Relat.Fields* 98.339-359(1994)
134. Jin Ma, Jiongmin Yong, Solvability Of Forward-Backward Sdes And The Nodal Set Of Hamilton-Jacobi-Bellman Equations, *Chinese Ann Math B* 16 (3): 279-298 Jul 1995
135. Jin Ma, Jiongmin Yong,, Adapted solution of a degenerate backward spde, with applications, *Stochastic Process and their Application* 70 (1997) 59-84
136. Jin Ma, Jiongmin Yong, Forward-backward stochastic differential equations and their applications - Introduction, *Lect Notes Math* 1702: 1-24 1999
137. Jin Ma, Jiongmin Yong, On linear, degenerate backward stochastic partial differential equations. *Probab. Theory Relat. Fields* 113, No.2, 135-170 (1999)
138. Jin Ma, Jiongmin Yong, Approximate solvability of forward-backward stochastic differential equations. *Appl. Math. Optimization* 45, No.1, 1-22 (2002).

139. Jin Ma, Zajic, Tim Rough asymptotics of forward-backward stochastic differential equations. Chen, Shuping (ed.) et al., Control of distributed parameter and stochastic systems. Proceedings of the international conference (IFIP WG 7.2), Hangzhou, China, June 19-22, 1998. Boston, MA: Kluwer Academic Publishers. 239-246 (1999).
140. Jin Ma, Jianfeng Zhang, Representation theorems for backward stochastic differential equations. *Ann. Appl. Probab.* 12, No.4, 1390-1418 (2002).
141. Jin Ma, Jianfeng Zhang, Path regularity for solutions of backward stochastic differential equations. *Probab. Theory Relat. Fields* 122, No.2, 163-190 (2002).
142. Anis Matoussi, A Reflected solutions of backward stochastic differential equations with continuous coefficient, *Stat Probabil Lett* 34 (4): 347-354 Jul 16 1997
143. Anis Matoussi, Scheutzow, Michael Stochastic PDEs driven by nonlinear noise and backward doubly SDEs. *J. Theor. Probab.* 15, No.1, 1-39 (2002).
144. L. Mazliak, The maximum principle in stochastic control and backward equations, El Karoui, Nicole (ed.) et al., Backward stochastic differential equations. Harlow: Longman. Pitman Res. Notes Math. Ser. 364, 101-113 (1997).
145. Yuliya S. Mishura, Ol'tsik, Yanina A, Optimal financial strategy with wealth process governed by backward stochastic differential equation. *Theory Stoch. Process.* 4(20), No.1-2, 222-237 (1998).
146. Modeste N'Zi, Multivalued backward stochastic differential equations with local Lipschitz drift. *Stochastics Stochastics Rep.* 60, No.3-4, 205-218 (1997).
147. Modeste N'Zi, Multivalued backward stochastic differential equations with local Lipschitz drift. *Random Oper. Stoch. Equ.* 5, No.2, 163-172 (1997).
148. Modeste N'Zi, Ouknine, Youssef Multivalued backward stochastic differential equations with continuous coefficients. *Random Oper. Stoch. Equ.* 5, No.1, 59-68 (1997).
149. Modeste N'zi, Ouknine, Youssef Equations différentielles stochastiques retrogrades multivoques. (Multidimensional backward stochastic differential equations). (French) *Probab. Math. Stat.* 17, No.2, 259-275 (1997).
150. Modeste N'zi, Ouknine, Y. Backward stochastic differential equations with jumps involving a subdifferential operator. *Random Oper. Stoch. Equ.* 8, No.4, 319-338 (2000).
151. Xuerong Mao, Adapted solutions of backward stochastic differential equations with non-Lipschitz coefficients, *Stochastic Process and their Application* 58(1995) 281-292.
152. David Nualart, Schoutens, Wim Backward stochastic differential equations and Feynman-Kac formula for Levy processes, with applications in finance. *Bernoulli* 7, No.5, 761-776 (2001).
153. Y.Ouknine, Reflected backward stochastic differential equations with jumps. *Stochastics Stochastics Rep.* 65, No.1-2, 111-125 (1998).
154. E.Pardoux, Backward stochastic differential equations and applications. Chatterji, S. D. (ed.), Proceedings of the international congress of mathematicians, ICM '94, August 3-11, 1994, Zurich, Switzerland. Vol. II. Basel: Birkhauser. 1502-1510 (1995).
155. E. Pardoux, Backward Stochastic Differential Equations and Viscosity Solutions, 79-128, in *Stochastic Analysis and Related Topics*, VI, Birkhauser, 1996.
156. E. Pardoux, Generalized discontinuous backward stochastic differential equations. El Karoui, Nicole (ed.) et al., Backward stochastic differential equations. Harlow: Longman. Pitman Res. Notes Math. Ser. 364, 207-219 (1997).

157. E. Pardoux, Homogenization of Linear and semilinear second order parabolic PDEs with periodic coefficients: A probabilistic Approach, J. of Functional Analysis 167, 498–520 (1999)
158. E. Pardoux, Shige Peng, Adapted solution of a backward stochastic differential equation. Syst. Control Lett. 14, No.1, 55-61 (1990).
159. E. Pardoux, Shige Peng, Backward stochastic differential equations and quasilinear parabolic partial differential equations. Stochastic partial differential equations and their applications, Proc. IFIP Int. Conf., Charlotte/NC (USA) 1991, Lect. Notes Control Inf. Sci. 176, 200-217 (1992).
160. E. Pardoux, Shige Peng, Backward doubly stochastic differential equations and systems of quasilinear SPDEs. Probab. Theory Relat. Fields 98, No.2, 209-227 (1994).
161. E. Pardoux, F. Pradeilles, Zusheng Rao, Probabilistic interpretation of a system of semi-linear parabolic partial differential equations Ann. inst. Henri Poincaré, Vol.33, no 4, 1997, p.467-490.
162. E. Pardoux, A. Răscanu, Backward stochastic differential equations with subdifferential operator and related variation inequalities Stochastic Processes and their Applications 76 (1998) 191-215.
163. E. Pardoux, Shanjian Tang, Forward-backward stochastic differential equations and quasilinear parabolic PDEs. Probab. Theory Relat. Fields 114, No.2, 123-150 (1999).
164. E. Pardoux, A. Yu. Veretennikov, Averaging of backward stochastic differential equations, with application to semilinear PDE's. Stochastics Stochastics Rep. 60, No.3-4, 255-270 (1997).
165. E. Pardoux, SG Zhang, Generalized BSDEs and nonlinear Neumann boundary value problems, Probab Theory Rel 110 (4): 535-558 Apr. 1998
166. E. Pardoux, Aurel Răscanu, Backward stochastic variational inequalities. Stochastics Stochastics Rep. 67, No.3-4, 159-167 (1999).
167. Shige Peng, *On Hamilton-Jacobi-Bellman Equation with Stochastic Coefficients*, in Proceeding of the Annual Meeting on Control Theory and It's Applications, 1989.
168. Shige Peng, *A General Stochastic Maximum Principle for Optimal Control Problems*, SIAM J. Cont. 28: 4, 966-979, 1990.
169. Shige Peng, Maximum Principle for Stochastic Optimal Control with Nonconvex Control Domain, in Analysis and Optimization of Systems, A. Bensoussan J. L. Lions eds. Lecture Notes in Control and Information Sciences, 144, (1990), 724-732.
170. Shige Peng, *Probabilistic Interpretation for Systems of Quasilinear Parabolic Partial Differential Equations*, Stochastics, 37, 61–74, 1991.
171. Shige Peng, A Generalized Hamilton-Jacobi-Bellman Equation, Lect Notes Contr Inf 159: 126-134 1991.
172. Shige Peng, *Stochastic Hamilton-Jacobi-Bellman Equations*, SIAM Control 30(2), 284-304, 1992.
173. Shige Peng, *A Generalized Dynamic Programming Principle and Hamilton-Jacobi-Bellman equation*, Stochastics, 38, 119–134, 1992.
174. Shige Peng, *A Nonlinear Feynman-Kac Formula and Applications*, Proceedings of Symposium of System Sciences and Control theory, Chen Yong ed. 173-184, World Scientific, Singapore, 1992.

175. Shige Peng, *New Development in Stochastic Maximum Principle and Related Backward Stochastic Differential Equations*, in proceedings of 31st CDC Conference, Tucson 1992.
176. Shige Peng, Backward stochastic differential equations and applications to optimal control. *Appl. Math. Optimization* 27, No.2, 125-144 (1993).
177. Shige Peng, *BSDE and Exact Controllability of Stochastic Control Systems*, *Progress in Natural Science*, 4 3, 274-284, 1994.
178. Shige Peng, The backward stochastic differential equations and its applications. (Chinese. English summary) *Adv. Math.*, Beijing 26, No.2, 97-112 (1997).
179. Shige Peng, *Backward Stochastic Differential Equation in Finance*, *Mathematical Finance*, 1997, 7, 1-71,
180. Shige Peng, *Topics in Stochastic Analysis*, (with J. Yan, S. Fang and L.M. Wu), Ch.2: BSDE and Stochastic Optimizations (Chinese vers.), Science Publication, 1997.
181. Shige Peng, Monotonic limit theorem of BSDE and nonlinear decomposition theorem of Doob-Meyer's type, *Probab. Theory Rel. Fiel.* 113 (4): 473-499 Apr 1999
182. Problem of Eigenvalues of Stochastic Hamiltonian Systems with Boundary Conditions, *Stochastic Processes and Their Applications*, **88**, 259-290, 2000.
183. A Stochastic Laplace Transform for Adapted Processes and Related BSDEs, in *Optimal Control and Partial Differential Equations*, J.L. Menaldi et al. (Eds.) 283-292, IOS Press, Amsterdam, 2001.
184. Shige Peng, Zhen Wu, Fully coupled forward-backward stochastic differential equations and applications to optimal control, *Siam J Control Optim* 37 (3): 825-843 Apr 13 1999
185. Shige Peng, Open problems on backward stochastic differential equations. Shuping Chen (ed.) et al., *Control of distributed parameter and stochastic systems. Proceedings of the international conference (IFIP WG 7.2)*, Hangzhou, China, June 19-22, 1998. Boston, MA: Kluwer Academic Publishers. 265-273 (1999).
186. Shige Peng, Problem of eigenvalues of stochastic Hamiltonian systems with boundary conditions, *Stoch Proc Appl* 88 (2): 259-290 Aug 2000
187. Peng, S., Shi, Yufeng Infinite horizon forward-backward stochastic differential equations. *Stochastic Processes Appl.* 85, No.1, 75-92 (2000).
188. S. Peng, Yufeng Shi, A type of time-symmetric forward-backward stochastic differential equations. (English. Abridged French version) *C. R., Math., Acad. Sci. Paris* 336, No.9, 773-778 (2003).
189. S. Peng and Z. Wu, Fully Coupled Forward-Backward Stochastic Differential Equations and Applications to Optimal Control, *SIAM Control*, 1999.
190. Shige Peng, Yang F. Duplicating and pricing contingent claims with constrained portfolios, *Prog. Nat. Sci.* 8 (6): 650-659 Dec 1998
191. M.Pontier, Solutions of forward-backward stochastic differential equations. El Karoui, Nicole (ed.) et al., *Backward stochastic differential equations*. Harlow: Longman. Pitman Res. Notes Math. Ser. 364, 39-46 (1997).
192. F.Pradeilles, Wavefront propagation for reaction-diffusion systems and backward SDES *ANN PROBAB* 26 (4): 1575-1613 OCT 1998
193. S.Ramasubramanian, Reflected backward stochastic differential equations in an orthant. *Proc. Indian Acad. Sci., Math. Sci.* 112, No.2, 347-360 (2002).
194. C. Rainer, Backward stochastic differential equations with Azema's martingale, *Stochastics* *Stochastics Rep.* 73, No.1-2, 65-98 (2002).

195. A. Rozkosz, Backward SDEs and Cauchy problem for semilinear equations in divergence form, *Probab Theory Rel. Field.* 125 (3): 393-407, 2003
196. Zhiqiang Shun, The pricing problem and the existence/uniqueness of solutions to a class of backward stochastic differential equations. (Chinese. English summary) *Chin. J. Appl. Probab. Stat.* 14, No.4, 409-418 (1998).
197. Rong Situ, On solutions of Backward stochastic differential equations with jumps and applications, *Stochastic Process and their Applications* (1996)
198. Rong Situ, Yueping Wang, On solutions of backward stochastic differential equations with jumps, with unbounded stopping times as terminal and with non-Lipschitz coefficients, and probabilistic interpretation of quasi-linear elliptic type integro-differential equations. *Appl. Math. Mech., Engl. Ed.* 21, No.6, 659-672 (2000).
199. Rong Situ, Min Huang, On solutions of backward stochastic differential equations with jumps in Hilbert spaces. II. (Chinese. English summary) *Acta Sci. Nat. Univ. Sunyatseni* 40, No.4, 20-23 (2001).
200. Rong Situ, Huanyao Xu, Adapted solutions of backward stochastic evolution equations with jumps on Hilbert space. II. (Chinese. English summary) *Acta Sci. Nat. Univ. Sunyatseni* 40, No.2, 1-5 (2001).
201. Rong Situ, On solutions of backward stochastic differential equations with jumps and with non-Lipschitzian coefficients in Hilbert spaces and stochastic control. *Stat. Probab. Lett.* 60, No.3, 279-288 (2002).
202. Stoica IL A probabilistic interpretation of the divergence and BSDE's, *Stoch Proc Appl* 103 (1): 31-55 Jan 2003
203. M. Sirbu, G.Tessitore, Null controllability of an infinite dimensional SDE with state- and control-dependent noise *Syst. Contro. Lett.* 44 (5): 385-394 DEC 14 2001
204. Shangjina Tang, The maximum principle for partially observed optimal control of stochastic differential equations, *Siam J Control Optim* 36 (5): 1596-1617 Sep 1998
205. Shangjina Tang, Financial mean-variance problems and stochastic LQ problems: Linear stochastic Hamilton systems and backward stochastic Riccati equations. Yong, Jiongmin (ed.), *Recent developments in mathematical finance. Proceedings of the international conference on mathematical finance, Shanghai, China, May 10-13, 2001.* Singapore: World Scientific. 190-203 (2002).
206. Shangjina Tang, SH Hou, Optimal control of point processes with noisy observations: The maximum principle *APPL MATH OPT* 45 (2): 185-212 MAR-APR 2002
207. Shangjina Tang, General linear quadratic optimal stochastic control problems with random coefficients: Linear stochastic Hamilton systems and backward stochastic Riccati equations *SIAM J CONTROL OPTIM* 42 (1): 53-75 2003.
208. Shanjian Tang, Xunjing Li, Necessary conditions for optimal control of stochastic systems with random jumps, *SIAM J. Control and optimization*, Vol. 32, No. 5, 1447-1475.
209. A. Thalmaier, Martingales on Riemannian manifolds and the nonlinear heat equation *Stochastic analysis and Applications*, Singapore: World Scientific Press, 1996, 429-440
210. A. Thalmaier, Brownian Motion and the formation singularities in the heat flow for harmonic maps 350-366

211. Xiangjun Wang, On backward stochastic differential equations driven by a continuous semi-martingale. (Chinese. English summary) *J. Math.*, Wuhan Univ. 19, No.1, 45-50 (1999).
212. Zhen Wu, Maximum principle for optimal control problem of fully coupled forward-backward stochastic systems. *Syst. Sci. Math. Sci.* 11, No.3, 249-259 (1998).
213. Zhen Wu, Adapted solution of generalized forward-backward stochastic differential equations and its dependence on parameters. (Chinese) *Chin. Ann. Math.*, Ser. A 19, No.1, 55-62 (1998).
214. Zhen Wu, Forward-Backward Stochastic Differential Equations with Brownian Motion and Poisson process, *ACTA Mathematics Application Sinica* Oct. 1999 Vol.15 No.4 433-443.
215. Z. Wu The comparison theorem of FBSDE *Stat. Prob. Lett.* 44 (1): 1-6, 1, 1999.
216. Zhen Wu, Fully coupled FBSDE with Brownian motion and Poisson process in stopping time duration, *J Aust Math Soc* 74: 249-266 Part 2 Apr 2003
217. Jianming Xia, Backward stochastic differential equation with random measures. *Acta Math. Appl. Sin.*, Engl. Ser. 16, No.3, 225-234 (2000).
218. Wensheng Xu, Stochastic maximum principle for optimal control problem of forward and backward system. *J. Aust. Math. Soc.*, Ser. B 37, No.2, 172-185 (1995).
219. Bo Yang, Necessary conditions for optimal controls of forward-backward stochastic systems with nonsmooth cost functionals. (Chinese. English summary) *J. Fudan Univ.*, Nat. Sci. 39, No.1, 61-67 (2000).
220. Jinchun Ye, Coupled forward-backward stochastic differential equations with random jumps. (Chinese. English summary) *Chin. Ann. Math.*, Ser. A 23, No.6, 737-750 (2002).
221. Jiongmin Yong, Finding adapted solutions of forward-backward stochastic differential equations method of continuation, *Probability Theory and Related Fields* 107. 537-572 (1997)
222. Jiongmin Yong, Stochastic controls and forward-backward SDES. Chen, Shuping (ed.) et al., *Control of distributed parameter and stochastic systems. Proceedings of the international conference (IFIP WG 7.2), Hangzhou, China, June 19-22, 1998.* Boston, MA: Kluwer Academic Publishers. 307-314 (1999).
223. Jiongmin Yong, Xunyu Zhou, *Stochastic control-Hamiltonian Systems and HJB Equations*, Springer, Applications of Mathematics 43, 1999
224. Jiongmin Yong, Linear Forward-Backward stochastic differential equations, *Appl. Math. Optim.* 39:93-119 (1999)
225. Jiongmin Yong, European -type contingent claims in an incomplete market with constrained wealth and portfolio, *Mathematical Finance*, Vol. 9, No. 4 (October 1999) 387-412
226. Jiongmin Yong, Optimal portfolios in an incomplete market, *Annals of Economics and Finance* 1, 359-381 (2000).
227. Jiongmin Yong, Replication of American contingent claims in incomplete markets, *International Journals of Theoretical and Applied Finance*, Vol. 4, No. 3 (2001) 439-466
228. Jiongmin Yong (ed.), *Recent developments in mathematical finance. Proceedings of the international conference on mathematical finance, Shanghai, China, May 10-13, 2001.* Singapore: World Scientific. 28-38 (2002).



229. Jiongmin Yong, Forward-backward stochastic differential equation: A useful tool for mathematical finance and other related fields. *Surv. Math. Ind.* 10, No.3, 175-229 (2002).
230. Jiongmin Yong, A leader-follower stochastic linear quadratic differential game *SIAM J CONTROL OPTIM* 41 (4): 1015-1041 DEC 3 2002
231. Jiongmin Yong, Degenerate BSDEs and FESDEs with applications in mathematical finance, *Insur Math Econ* 32 (3): 483-483 Jul 21 2003
232. Zengting Yuan, Solution of generalized backward stochastic differential equations with jumps. (Chinese. English summary) *J. Math.*, Wuhan Univ. 20, No.2, 217-221 (2000).
233. NI Zaidi, N.Lanjri, D.Nualart, Backward stochastic differential equations in the plane. *Potential Anal.* 16, No.4, 373-386 (2002).
234. NL Zaidi, A class of two-parameter backward stochastic differential equations driven by a Brownian sheet, *Stoch Anal Appl* 20 (4): 883-899 Jul 2002
235. Guichang Zhang, Random walk and a discrete backward stochastic differential equation. (Chinese. English summary) *Math. Appl.* 15, No.2, 76-79 (2002).
236. Yinnan Zhang, Weian Zheng, Discretizing a backward stochastic differential equation. *Int. J. Math. Math. Sci.* 32, No.2, 103-116 (2002).
237. Liuyi Zhong, Minghao Xu, Local existence and uniqueness of adapted solutions of backward stochastic evolution equations. (Chinese. English summary) *J. Math.*, Wuhan Univ. 16, No.4, 417-422 (1996).
238. Liuyi Zhong, Minghao Xu, Global existence and uniqueness of adapted solution of a backward stochastic evolution equation in Hilbert space. (Chinese. English summary) *J. Wuhan Univ.*, Nat. Sci. Ed. 43, No.5, 591-597 (1997).
239. Shaofu Zhou, Zhiyuan Huang, Zigang Zhang, Development of backward stochastic differential equation and its applications. (Chinese. English summary) *Math. Appl.* 15, No.2, 9-13 (2002).